

e 10642 ✓

ANGE PITOU.

VOLUME I.



THE WORKS OF
ALEXANDRE DUMAS

Ange Pitou
Or, Taking the Bastille

In Two Volumes
Volume I



COLONIAL PRESS COMPANY
BOSTON and NEW YORK

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER	PAGE
I. IN WHICH THE READER IS INTRODUCED TO THE ACQUAINTANCE OF THE HERO OF THIS HISTORY, AS WELL AS THAT OF THE COUNTRY IN WHICH HE FIRST SAW THE LIGHT	9
II. IN WHICH IT IS PROVED THAT AN AUNT IS NOT ALWAYS A MOTHER	22
III. ANGE PITOU AT HIS AUNT'S	36
IV. OF THE INFLUENCE WHICH A BARBARISM AND SEVEN SOLECISMS MAY HAVE UPON THE WHOLE LIFE OF A MAN	57
V. A PHILOSOPHICAL FARMER	66
VI. PASTORAL SCENES	77
VII. IN WHICH IT IS DEMONSTRATED THAT, ALTHOUGH LONG LEGS MAY BE SOMEWHAT UNGRACEFUL IN DANCING, THEY ARE VERY USEFUL IN RUNNING	90
VIII. SHOWING WHY THE GENTLEMAN IN BLACK HAD GONE INTO THE FARM AT THE SAME TIME WITH THE TWO SERGEANTS.	109
IX. THE ROAD TO PARIS	123
X. WHAT WAS HAPPENING AT THE END OF THE ROAD WHICH PITOU WAS TRAVELLING UPON,—THAT IS TO SAY, AT PARIS	135
XI. THE NIGHT BETWEEN THE TWELFTH AND THIR- TEENTH OF JULY	146
XII. WHAT OCCURRED DURING THE NIGHT OF THE , TWELFTH JULY, 1789	157
XIII. THE KING IS SO GOOD! THE QUEEN IS SO GOOD!	172

CHAPTER	PAGE
XIV. THE THREE POWERS OF FRANCE	188
XV. MONSIEUR DE LAUNAY, GOVERNOR OF THE BAS- TILE.	199
XVI. THE BASTILE AND ITS GOVERNOR.	209
XVII. THE BASTILE	223
XVIII. DOCTOR GILBERT.	243
XIX. THE TRIANGLE	253
XX. SÉBASTIEN GILBERT.	267
XXI. MADAME DE STAËL	281
XXII. KING LOUIS XVI.	303
XXIII. THE COUNTESS DE CHARNY	317
XXIV. ROYAL PHILOSOPHY	329
XXV. IN THE QUEEN'S APARTMENTS	337
XXVI. HOW THE KING SUPPED ON THE FOURTEENTH OF JULY, 1789	348
XXVII. OLIVIER DE CHARNY	356
XXVIII. OLIVIER DE CHARNY	365
XXIX. A TRIO	376
XXX. A KING AND A QUEEN	385

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

VOL. I.

	PAGE
A FÊTE AT VERSAILLES	<i>Frontispiece</i>
PORTRAIT OF MARAT	196

ANGE PITOU.

CHAPTER I.

IN WHICH THE READER IS INTRODUCED TO THE ACQUAINTANCE OF THE HERO OF THIS HISTORY, AS WELL AS THAT OF THE COUNTRY IN WHICH HE FIRST SAW THE LIGHT.

ON the borders of Picardy and the province of Soissons, and on that part of the national territory which, under the name of the Isle of France, formed a portion of the ancient patrimony of our kings, and in the centre of an immense crescent formed by a forest of fifty thousand acres which stretches its horns to the north and south, rises, almost buried amid the shades of a vast park planted by Francis I. and Henri II., the small city of Villers-Cotterêts. This place is celebrated from having given birth to Charles Albert Demoustier, who, at the period when our present history commences, was there writing his *Letters to Emilie on Mythology*, to the unbounded satisfaction of the pretty women of those days, who eagerly snatched his publications from each other as soon as printed.

Let us add to complete the poetical reputation of this little city, whose detractors, notwithstanding its royal chateau and its two thousand four hundred inhabitants, obstinately persist in calling it a mere village, — let us add, we say, to complete its poetical reputation, that it is situated at two leagues' distance from Laferté-Milan, where Racine was born, and eight leagues from Château-Thierry, the birthplace of La Fontaine.

Let us also state that the mother of the author of "*Britannicus*" and "*Athalie*" was from Villers-Cotterêts.

But now we must return to its royal chateau and its two thousand four hundred inhabitants.

This royal chateau, begun by Francis I., whose salamanders still decorate it, and finished by Henri II., whose cipher it bears entwined with that of Catherine de Médicis and encircled by the three crescents of Diana of Poitiers, after having sheltered the loves of the knight-king with Madame d'Étampes, and those of Louis Philippe of Orléans with the beautiful Madame de Montesson, had become almost uninhabited since the death of this last prince; his son, Philippe d'Orléans, afterwards called *Égalité*, having made it descend from the rank of a royal residence to that of a mere hunting rendezvous.

It is well known that the chateau and forest of Villers-Cotterêts formed part of the appanage settled by Louis XIV. on his brother *Monsieur*, when the second son of Anne of Austria married the sister of Charles II., the Princess Henrietta of England.

As to the two thousand four hundred inhabitants of whom we have promised our readers to say a word, they were, as in all localities where two thousand four hundred people are united, a heterogeneous assemblage.

First: of a few nobles, who spent their summers in the neighbouring chateaus and their winters in Paris, and who, mimicking the prince, had only a lodging place in the city.

Secondly: of a goodly number of citizens, who could be seen, let the weather be what it might, leaving their houses after dinner, umbrella in hand, to take their daily walk, a walk which was regularly bounded by a deep invisible ditch which separated the park from the forest, situated about a quarter of a league from the town, and which was called, doubtless on account of the exclamation which the sight of it drew from the asthmatic lungs of the promenaders, satisfied at finding themselves not too much out of breath, the "*Ha! ha!*"

Thirdly: of a considerably greater number of artisans, who worked the whole of the week and only allowed themselves to take a walk on the Sunday; whereas their fellow townsmen, more favoured by fortune, could enjoy it every day.

Fourthly and finally: of some miserable proletarians, for whom the week had not even a Sabbath, and who, after having toiled six days in the pay of the nobles, the citizens, or even of the artisans, wandered on the seventh day through the forest to gather up dry wood or branches of the lofty trees, torn from them by the storm, that mower of the forest, to whom oak trees are but as ears of wheat, and which it scattered over the humid soil beneath the lofty trees, the magnificent appanage of a prince.

If Villers-Cotterêts (*Villerii ad Cotiam Retice*) had been, unfortunately, a town of sufficient importance in history to induce archæologists to ascertain and follow up its successive changes from a village to a town and from a town to a city, — the last, as we have said, being strongly contested, — they would certainly have proved this fact, that the village had begun by being a row of houses on either side of the road from Paris to Soissons; then they would have added that its situation on the borders of a beautiful forest having, though by slow degrees, brought to it a great increase of inhabitants, other streets were added to the first, diverging like the rays of a star and leading towards other small villages with which it was important to keep up communication, and converging towards a point which naturally became the centre, that is to say, what in the provinces is called THE SQUARE, whatever might be its shape, and around which the handsomest buildings of the village, now become a burgh, were erected, and in the middle of which rises a fountain, now decorated with a quadruple dial; in short, they would have fixed the precise date when, near the modest village church, the first want of a people, arose the first turrets of the vast chateau, the last caprice of a king, — a chateau which, after having been, as we have already said, by turns a royal and a

princely residence, has in our days become a melancholy and hideous receptacle for mendicants under the direction of the Prefecture of the Seine, and to which Monsieur Marrast issues his mandates through delegates of whom he has not, nor probably will ever have, either the time or care to ascertain the names.

But at the period at which this history commences, royal affairs, though already somewhat tottering, had not yet fallen to the low degree to which they have fallen in our days; the chateau was no longer inhabited by a prince, 't is true, but it had not yet become the abode of beggars; it was simply uninhabited, excepting the indispensable attendants required for its preservation, among whom were to be remarked the doorkeeper, the master of the tennis court, and the house steward; and therefore the windows of this immense edifice fronting the park, and others on a large court which was aristocratically called the square of the chateau, were all closed, which added not a little to the gloominess and solitary appearance of this square, at one of the extremities of which rose a small house, regarding which the reader, we hope, will permit us to say a few words.

It was a small house, of which, if we may be allowed to use the term, the back only was to be seen. But, as is the case with many individuals, this back had the privilege of being the most presentable part. In fact, the front, which was towards the Rue de Soissons, one of the principal streets of the town, opened upon it by an awkwardly constructed gate, and which was ill-naturedly kept closed eighteen hours out of the twenty-four, while that of the other side was gay and smiling; that is to say, that on the opposite side was a garden, above the wall of which could be seen the tops of cherry, pear, and plum trees, richly laden with their beauteous fruits, while on each side of a small gate by which the garden was entered from the square was a centenary acacia tree which in the spring appeared to stretch out their branches above the wall

to scatter their perfumed flowers over the surrounding grounds.

The abode was the residence of the chaplain of the chateau, who, notwithstanding the absence of the master, performed mass every Sunday in the seignorial church. He had a small pension, and, besides this, had the charge of two purses, the one to send a scholar yearly to the College of Plessis, the other for one to the seminary at Soissons. It is needless to say that it was the Orléans family who supplied these purses; founded, that for the seminary by the son of the Regent, that for the college by the father of the prince; and that these two purses were the objects of ambition to all parents, at the same time that they were a cause of absolute despair to the pupils, being the source of extraordinary compositions, which compositions were to be presented for approval of the chaplain every Thursday.

Well, one Thursday in the month of July, 1789, a somewhat disagreeable day, being darkened by a storm, beneath which the two magnificent acacias we have spoken of, having already lost the virginal whiteness of their spring attire, shed a few leaves yellowed by the first heats of summer. After a silence of some duration, broken only by the rustling of those leaves as they whirled against each other upon the beaten ground of the square, or by the shrill cry of the martin, pursuing flies as it skimmed along the ground, eleven o'clock resounded from the pointed and slated belfry of the town hall.

Instantly a hurrah, loud as could have been uttered by a whole regiment of fusiliers, accompanied by a rushing sound like that of the avalanche when bounding from crag to crag, was heard; the door between the two acacia trees was opened, or rather burst open, and gave egress to a torrent of boys, who spread themselves over the square, when instantly some five or six joyous and noisy groups were formed, the one around a circle formed to keep peg-tops prisoners, another about a game of hop-scotch traced

with chalk upon the ground, another before several holes scientifically hollowed out, where those who were fortunate enough to have sous might lose them at pitch and toss.

At the same time that these gambling and playful scholars—who were apostrophised by the few neighbours whose windows opened on this square as wicked do-no-goods, and who in general wore trousers the knees of which were torn, and so were the elbows of their jackets—assembled to play upon the square, those who were called good and reasonable boys, and who in the opinion of the gossips must be the pride and joy of their respective parents, were seen to detach themselves from the general mass, and by various paths, though with slow steps indicative of their regret, walking basket in hand towards their paternal roofs, where awaited them the slice of bread and butter, or of bread and preserved fruit, destined to be their compensation for the games they had thus abjured. The latter were in general dressed in jackets in tolerably good condition, and in breeches which were almost irreproachable; and this, together with their boasted propriety of demeanour, rendered them objects of derision, and even of hatred, to their less well-dressed, and, above all, less well-disciplined companions.

Besides the two classes we have pointed out under the denomination of gambling and well-conducted scholars, there was still a third, which we shall designate by the name of idle scholars, who scarcely ever left school with the others, whether to play in the square, or to return to their paternal homes. Seeing that this unfortunate class were almost constantly what in school language is termed kept,—which means to say, that while their companions, after having said their lessons and written their themes, were playing at top, or eating their bread and jam, they remained nailed to their school benches or before their desks that they might learn their lessons or write their themes during the hours of recreation, which they had not been able to accomplish satisfactorily during the class;

when, indeed, the gravity of their faults did not demand a punishment more severe than that of mere detention, such as the rod, the cane, or the cat-o'-nine-tails.

And had any one followed the path which led into the school-room, and which the pupils had just used, in the inverse sense, to get out of it, he would — after going through a narrow alley, which prudently ran outside of the fruit garden, and opened into a large yard which served as a private playground — he would, as we have said, have heard, on entering this courtyard, a loud, harsh voice resounding from the upper part of a staircase, while a scholar, whom our impartiality as historians compels us to acknowledge as belonging to the third class we have mentioned, that is to say, to that of the idle boys, was precipitately descending the said staircase, making just such a movement with his shoulders as asses are wont to do when endeavouring to rid themselves of a cruel rider, or as scholars, when they have received a sharp blow from the cat-o'-nine-tails, to alleviate the pain they are enduring.

"Ah, miscreant! ah, you little excommunicated villain!" cried the voice; "ah, you young serpent! away with you, off with you! *vade, vade!* Remember that for three whole years have I been patient with you, but there are rascals who would tire the patience of even God himself. But now it is all over; I have done with you. Take your squirrels, take your frogs, take your lizards, take your silkworms, take your cockchafers, and go to your aunt, go to your uncle if you have one, or to the devil if you will, so that I never more set eyes upon you! *Vade, vade!*"

"Oh, my good Mousieur Fortier, do pray forgive me!" replied the other voice, still upon the staircase, and in a supplicating tone; "is it worth your while to put yourself into such a towering passion for a poor little barbarism, and a few solecisms, as you call them?"

"Three barbarisms and seven solecisms in a theme of

only twenty-five lines!" replied the voice, in a rougher and still more angry tone.

"It has been so to-day, monsieur, I acknowledge; Thursday is always my unlucky day; but if by chance to-morrow my theme should be well written, would you not forgive me my misfortunes of to-day? Tell me now, would you not, my good abbé?"

"On every composition day for the last three years you have repeated that same thing to me, you idle fellow, and the examination is fixed for the first of November, and I, on the entreaty of your Aunt Angelique, have had the weakness to put your name down on the list of candidates for the Soissons purse. I shall have the shame of seeing my pupil rejected, and of hearing it everywhere declared that Pitou is an ass, — *Angelus Petovius asinus est.*"

Let us hasten to say, that the kind-hearted reader may from the first moment feel for him all the interest he deserves, that Ange Pitou, whose name the Abbé Fortier had so picturesquely Latinised, is the hero of this story.

"Oh, my good Monsieur Fortier! oh, my dear master!" replied he, in despair.

"I your master!" exclaimed the abbé, deeply humiliated by the appellation. "God be thanked! I am no more your master than you are my pupil. I disown you, — I do not know you. I would that I had never seen you. I forbid you to mention my name, or even to bow to me. *Retro*, miserable boy, *retro*!"

"Oh, Monsieur l'Abbé!" insisted the unhappy Pitou, who appeared to have some weighty motive for not falling out with his master; "do not, I entreat you, withdraw your interest for me on account of a poor, halting theme."

"Ah!" exclaimed the abbé, quite beside himself on hearing this last supplication, and running down the four first steps of the staircase, while Ange Pitou jumped down the four bottom ones, and could thus be seen from the courtyard.

"Ah! you are chopping logic when you cannot even

write a theme; you are calculating the extent of my patience, when you know not how to distinguish the nominative from the vocative."

"You have always been so kind to me, Monsieur l'Abbé," replied the committer of barbarisms, "and you will only have to say a word in my favour to monseigneur the bishop."

"Would you have me belie my conscience, wretched boy?" cried the infuriated abbé.

"If it be to do a good action, Monsieur l'Abbé, the God of mercy will forgive you for it."

"Never! never!"

"And besides, who knows? the examiners perhaps will not be more severe towards me than they were towards my foster brother, Sebastian Gilbert, when last year he was a candidate for the Paris purse; and he was a famous fellow for barbarisms, if ever there was one, although he was only thirteen years old, and I was seventeen."

"Ah, indeed! and this is another precious stupidity which you have uttered," cried the abbé, coming down the remaining steps, and in his turn appearing at the door with his cat-o'-nine-tails in his hand, while Pitou took care to keep at the prudent distance from his professor which he had all along maintained. "Yes, I say stupidity," continued the abbé, crossing his arms, and looking indignantly at his scholar; "and this is the reward of my lessons. Triple animal that you are! it is thus you remember the old axiom, *Noli minora, loqui majora volens*. Why, it was precisely because Gilbert was so much younger that they were more indulgent towards a child—a child of fourteen years old—than they would have been to a great simpleton of nearly eighteen."

"Yes; and because he is the son of Monsieur Honoré Gilbert, who has an income of eighteen thousand livres from good landed property, and this on the plain of Pilla-leux," replied the logician, in a piteous tone.

The Abbé Fortier looked at Pitou, pouting his lips and knitting his brows.

"This is somewhat less stupid," grumbled he, after a moment's silence and scrutiny. "And yet it is but specious, and without any basis: *Species non autem corpus*."

"Oh, if I were the son of a man possessing an income of eighteen thousand livres!" repeated Ange Pitou, who thought he perceived that his answer had made some impression on the professor.

"Yes, but you are not so, and, to make up for it you are as ignorant as the clown of whom Juvenal speaks,—a profane citation," the abbé crossed himself, "but no less just,—*Arcadius juvenis*. I would wager that you do not even know what *Arcadius* means?"

"Why, Arcadian, to be sure," replied Ange Pitou, drawing himself up with the majesty of pride.

"And what besides?"

"Besides what?"

"Arcadia was the country of donkeys, and with the ancients, as with us, *asinus* was synonymous with *stultus*."

"I did not wish to understand your question in that sense," rejoined Pitou, "seeing that it was far from my imagination that the austere mind of my worthy preceptor could have descended to satire."

The Abbé Fortier looked at him a second time, and with as profound attention as the first.

"Upon my word!" cried he, somewhat mollified by the incense which his disciple had offered him; "there are really moments when one would swear that the fellow is less stupid than he appears to be."

"Come, Monsieur l'Abbé," said Pitou, who, if he had not heard the words the abbé had uttered, had caught the expression which had passed over his countenance of a return to a more merciful consideration; "forgive me this time, and you will see what a beautiful theme I will write by to-morrow."

"Well, then, I will consent," said the abbé, placing, in

sign of truce, his cat-o'-nine-tails in his belt, and approaching Pitou, who, observing this pacific demonstration, made no further attempt to move.

"Oh, thanks, thanks!" cried the pupil.

"Wait a moment, and be not so hasty with your thanks. Yes, I forgive you, but on one condition."

Pitou hung down his head, and as he was now at the discretion of the abbé, he waited with resignation.

"It is that you shall correctly reply to a question I shall put to you."

"In Latin?" inquired Pitou, with much anxiety.

"In Latin," replied the professor.

Pitou drew a deep sigh.

There was a momentary silence, during which the joyous cries of the schoolboys, who were playing on the square, reached the ears of Ange Pitou. He sighed a second time, more deeply than the first.

"*Quid virtus, quid religio?*" asked the abbé.

These words pronounced with all the pomposity of a pedagogue, rang in the ears of poor Ange Pitou like the trumpet of the angel on the day of judgment: a cloud passed before his eyes, and such an effect was produced upon his intellect by it, that he thought for a moment he was on the point of becoming mad.

However, as this violent cerebral labour did not appear to produce any result, the required answer was indefinitely postponed. A prolonged noise was then heard, as the professor slowly inhaled a pinch of snuff.

Pitou clearly saw that it was necessary to say something.

"*Nescio*," he replied, hoping that his ignorance would be pardoned by his avowing that ignorance in Latin.

"You do not know what is virtue!" exclaimed the abbé, choking with rage; "you do not know what is religion!"

"I know very well what it is in French," replied Ange, "but I do not know it in Latin."

"Well, then, get thee to Arcadia, *juvenis*; all is now ended between us, pitiful wretch!"

Pitou was so overwhelmed that he did not move a step, although the Abbé Fortier had drawn his cat-o'-nine-tails from his belt, with as much dignity as the commander of an army would, at the commencement of a battle, have drawn his sword from the scabbard.

"But what is to become of me?" cried the poor youth, letting his arms fall listlessly by his side. "What will become of me if I lose the hope of being admitted into the seminary?"

"Become whatever you can. It is, by Heaven! the same to me."

The good abbé was so angry that he almost swore.

"But you do not know, then, that my aunt believes I am already an abbé?"

"Well, then, she will know that you are not fit to be made even a sacristan."

"But, Monsieur Fortier —"

"I tell you to depart, — *limine linguæ*."

"Well, then," cried Pitou, as a man who makes up his mind to a painful resolution, but who in fact does make it; "will you allow me to take my desk?" said he to the abbé, hoping that during the time he would be performing this operation a respite would be given him, and the abbé's heart would become impressed with more merciful feelings.

"Most assuredly," said the latter; "your desk, with all that it contains."

Pitou sorrowfully reascended the staircase, for the school-room was on the first floor. On returning to the room — in which, assembled around a large table, and pretending to be hard at work, were seated some fourteen boys — and carefully raising the flap of his desk, to ascertain whether all the animals and insects which belonged to him were safely stowed in it, and lifting it so gently that it proved the great care he took of his favourites, he walked with slow and measured steps along the corridor.

At the top of the stairs was the Abbé Fortier, with out-

stretched arm, pointing to the staircase with the end of his cat-o'-nine-tails.

It was necessary to pass beneath this terrible instrument of justice. Ange Pitou made himself as humble and as small as he possibly could, but this did not prevent him from receiving as he passed by a last thwack from the instrument to which Abbé Fortier owed his best pupils, and the employment of which, although more frequent and more prolonged on the back of Ange Pitou, had produced the sorrowful results just witnessed.

While Ange Pitou, wiping away a last tear, was bending his steps, his desk upon his head, towards Pleux, the quarter of the town in which his aunt resided, let us say a few words as to his physical appearance and his antecedents.

CHAPTER II.

IN WHICH IT IS PROVED THAT AN AUNT IS NOT ALWAYS A MOTHER.

LOUIS ANGE PITOU, as he himself said in his dialogue with the Abbé Fortier, was, at the period when this history commences, seventeen and a half years old. He was a tall, slender youth, with yellow hair, red cheeks, and blue eyes. The bloom of youth, fresh and innocent, was expanded over his wide mouth, the thick lips of which discovered, when extended by a hearty laugh, two perfectly complete rows of formidable teeth, — particularly formidable to those of whose dinner he was about to partake. At the end of his long, bony arms were solidly attached hands as large as beetles, legs rather inclined to be bowed, knees as big as a child's head, which regularly made their way through his tight black breeches, and immense feet, which, notwithstanding, were at their ease in calf-skin shoes reddened by constant use; such, with a sort of cassock, a garment something between a frock-coat and a blouse, is an exact and impartial description of the ex-disciple of the Abbé Fortier.

We must now sketch his moral character.

Ange Pitou had been left an orphan when only twelve years old, the time at which he had the misfortune to lose his mother, of whom he was the only child. That is to say, that since the death of his father, which event had occurred before he had attained the years of recollection, Ange Pitou, adored by his poor mother, had been allowed to do whatever he thought fit, which had greatly developed his physical education, but had altogether retarded the

advancement of his moral faculties. Born in a charming village called Haramont, situated at the distance of a league from the town and in the centre of a wood, his first walks had been to explore the depths of his native forest, and the first application of his intelligence was that of making war upon the animals by which it was inhabited. The result of this application, thus directed towards one sole object, was that at ten years old Pitou was a very distinguished poacher, and a bird-catcher of the first order; and that almost without any labour, and above all without receiving lessons from any one, but by the sole power of that instinct given by nature to man when born in the midst of woods, and which would seem to be a portion of that same instinct with which she has endowed the animal kingdom. And therefore every run of hare or rabbit within the circle of three leagues was known to him, and not a marshy pool where birds were wont to drink had escaped his investigation. In every direction were to be seen the marks made by his pruning-knife on trees that were adapted to catching birds by imitating their calls. From these different exercises it resulted that in some of them Pitou had attained the most extraordinary skill.

Thanks to his long arms and his prominent knees, which enabled him to climb the largest standard trees, he would ascend to their very summits, to take the highest nests, with an agility and a certainty which attracted the admiration of his companions, and which, in a latitude nearer to the equator, would have excited the esteem even of monkeys. In that sport, so attractive even to grown people, in which the bird-catcher inveigles the birds to light upon a tree set with limed twigs, by imitating the cry of the jay or the owlet, — birds which, among the plumed tribe, enjoy the bitter hatred of the whole species, and to such an extent that every sparrow, every finch or tomtit, hastens at the call in the hope of plucking out a single feather from the common enemy, and, for the most, leave all their own, — Pitou's companions either made use

of a natural owlet or a natural jay, or with some particular plant formed a pipe, by aid of which they managed to imitate the cry of either the one or the other of these birds. But Pitou disdained all such preparations, despised such petty subterfuges. It was upon his own resources that he relied, it was with his own natural means that he drew them into the snare. It was, in short, his own lips that modulated the shrieking and discordant cries which brought around him not only other birds, but birds of the same species, who allowed themselves to be enticed, we will not say by this note, but by this cry, so admirably did he imitate it. As to the sport in the marshy pools, it was to Pitou the easiest thing in the world, and he would certainly have despised it as a pursuit of art had it been less productive as an object of profit. But, notwithstanding the contempt with which he regarded this sport, there was not one of the most expert in the art who could have vied with Pitou in covering with fern a pool that was too extensive to be completely laid, — that is the technical term; none of them knew so well as he how to give the proper inclination to his limed twigs, so that the most cunning birds could not drink either over or under them; and, finally, none of them had that steadiness of hand and that clear-sightedness which must insure the due mixture, though in scientifically unequal quantities, of the rosin, oil, and glue, in order that the glue should not become either too fluid or too brittle.

Now, as the estimation of the qualities of a man changes according to the theatre on which these qualities are produced, and according to the spectators before whom they are exhibited, Pitou in his own native village, Haramont, amidst his country neighbours, — that is to say, men accustomed to demand of nature at least half their resources, and, like all peasants, possessing an instinctive hatred of civilisation, — Pitou enjoyed such distinguished consideration that his poor mother could not for a moment entertain the idea that he was pursuing a wrong path, and

that the most perfect education that can be given, and at great expense, to a man, was not precisely that which her son, a privileged person in this respect, had given gratis to himself.

But when the good woman fell sick, when she felt that death was approaching, when she understood that she was about to leave her child alone and isolated in the world, she began to entertain doubts, and looked around her for some one who would be the stay and the support of the future orphan. She then remembered that ten years before, a young man had knocked at her door in the middle of the night, bringing with him a newly born child, to take charge of which he had not only given her a tolerably good round sum, but had deposited a still larger sum for the benefit of the child with a notary at Villers-Cotterêts. All that she had then known of this mysterious young man was that his name was Gilbert; but about three years previous to her falling ill he had reappeared. He was then a man about twenty-seven years of age, somewhat stiff in his demeanour, dogmatical in his conversation, and cold in his manner; but this first layer of ice melted at once when his child was brought to him, on finding that he was hale, hearty, and smiling, and brought up in the way in which he had directed, — that is to say, as a child of nature. He then pressed the hand of the good woman, and merely said to her, —

“In the hour of need calculate upon me.”

Then he had taken the child, had inquired the way to Ermenonville, and with his son performed the pilgrimage to the tomb of Rousseau, after which he returned to Villers-Cotterêts. Then, seduced, no doubt, by the wholesome air he breathed there, and by the favourable manner in which the notary had spoken of the school under the charge of the Abbé Fortier, he had left little Gilbert with the worthy man, whose philosophic appearance had struck him at first sight; for at that period philosophy held such great sway that it had insinuated itself even among churchmen.

After this he had set out again for Paris, leaving his address with the Abbé Fortier.

Pitou's mother was aware of all these circumstances. When at the point of death, those words, 'In the hour of need calculate upon me,' returned to her recollection. This was at once a ray of light to her; doubtless Providence had regulated all this in such a manner that poor Pitou might find even more than he was about to lose. She sent for the curate of the parish; as she had never learned to write, the curate wrote, and the same day the letter was taken to the Abbé Fortier, who immediately added Gilbert's address, and took it to the post-office.

It was high time, for the poor woman died two days afterwards. Pitou was too young to feel the full extent of the loss he had suffered; he wept for his mother, not from comprehending the eternal separation of the grave, but because he saw his mother cold, pale, disfigured. Then the poor lad felt instinctively that the guardian angel of their hearth had flown from it; that the house, deprived of his mother, had become deserted and uninhabitable. Not only could he not comprehend what was to be his future fate, but even how he was to exist the following day. Therefore, after following his mother's coffin to the churchyard, when the earth, thrown into the grave, resounded upon its lid, when the modest mound that covered it had been rounded off, he sat down upon it, and replied to every observation that was made to him as to his leaving it by shaking his head and saying that he had never left his mother, and that he would remain where she remained.

He stayed during the whole of that day and night seated upon his mother's grave.

It was there that the worthy Doctor Gilbert — but have we already informed the reader that the future protector of Pitou was a physician? — it was there that the worthy doctor found him, when, feeling the full extent of the duty imposed upon him by the promise he had made, he had

hastened to fulfil it, and this within forty-eight hours after the letter had been despatched.

Ange was very young when he had first seen the doctor, but it is well known that the impressions received in youth are so strong that they leave eternal reminiscences. Then the passage of the mysterious young man had left its trace in the house. He had there left the young child of whom we have spoken, and with him comparative ease and comfort; every time that Ange had heard his mother pronounce the name of Gilbert, it had been with a feeling that approached to adoration; then again, when he had reappeared at the house a grown man, and with the title of doctor, when he had added to the benefits he had showered upon it the promise of future protection, Pitou had comprehended, from the fervent gratitude of his mother, that he himself ought also to be grateful, and the poor youth, without precisely understanding what he was saying, had stammered out the words of eternal remembrance and profound gratitude which had before been uttered by his mother.

Therefore, as soon as he saw the doctor appear at the grated gate of the cemetery, and saw him advancing towards him amid the mossy graves and broken crosses, he recognised him, rose up and went to meet him, for he understood that to the person who had thus come on being called for by his mother he could not say no, as he had done to others; he therefore made no further resistance than that of turning back to give a last look at the grave, when Gilbert took him by the hand and gently drew him away from the gloomy enclosure. An elegant cabriolet was standing at the gate; he made the poor child get into it, and for the moment leaving the house of Pitou's mother under the guardianship of public faith and the interest which misfortune always inspires, he drove his young *protégé* to the town and alighted with him at the best inn, which at that time was called "The Dauphin." He was scarcely installed there when he sent for a tailor, who, having been forewarned, brought with him a quantity of ready made

clothes. He, with due precaution, selected for Pitou garments which were too long for him by two or three inches, a superfluity which, from the rate at which our hero was growing, promised not to be of long duration. After this, he walked with him towards that quarter of the town which we have designated as Pleux.

The nearer Pitou approached this quarter, the slower did his steps become, for it was evident that he was about to be conducted to the house of his Aunt Angelique; and notwithstanding that he had but seldom seen his godmother — for it was Aunt Angelique who had bestowed on Pitou his poetical Christian name — he had retained a very formidable remembrance of his respectable relative.

And in fact there was nothing about Aunt Angelique that could be in any way attractive to a child accustomed to all the tender care of maternal solicitude. Aunt Angelique was at that time an old maid between fifty-five and fifty-eight years of age, stultified by the most minute practices of religious bigotry, and in whom an ill-understood piety had inverted every charitable, merciful, and humane feeling, to cultivate in their stead a natural dose of avaricious intelligence, which was increased day by day from her constant intercourse with the bigoted old gossips of the town. She did not precisely live on charity; but besides the sale of the thread she spun upon her wheel, and the letting out of chairs in the church, which office had been granted to her by the chapter, she from time to time received from pious souls, who allowed themselves to be deceived by her pretensions to religion, small sums, which from their original copper she converted into silver, and then from silver into golden louis, which disappeared not only without any person seeing them disappear, but without any one ever suspecting their existence, and which were buried one by one in the cushion of the arm-chair upon which she sat to work; and when once in this hiding place they rejoined by degrees a certain number of their fellow coins, which had been gathered one by one,

and like them destined thenceforth to be sequestered from circulation until the unknown day of the death of the old maid should place them in the hands of her heir.

It was, then, towards the abode of this venerable relation that Doctor Gilbert was advancing, leading the great Pitou by the hand.

We say the great Pitou, because from three months after his birth Pitou had been too tall for his age.

Mademoiselle Rose Angelique Pitou, at the moment when her door opened to give ingress to her nephew and the doctor, was in a perfect transport of joyous humour. While they were singing mass for the dead over the dead body of her sister in law in the church at Haramont, there were a wedding and several baptisms in the church of Villers-Cotterêts, so that her chair-letting had in a single day amounted to six livres. Mademoiselle Angelique had therefore converted her pence into a silver crown, which in its turn added to three others which had been put by at different periods had given her a golden louis. This louis had at this precise moment been sent to rejoin the others in the chair cushion, and these days of reunion were naturally days of high festivity to Mademoiselle Angelique.

It was at the moment, and after having opened her door, which had been closed during the important operation, and Aunt Angelique had taken a last walk round her arm-chair to assure herself that no external demonstration could reveal the existence of the treasure concealed within, that the doctor and Pitou entered.

The scene might have been particularly affecting; but in the eyes of a man who was so perspicacious an observer as Doctor Gilbert, it was merely grotesque. On perceiving her nephew, the old bigot uttered a few words about her poor dear sister, whom she had loved so much; and then she appeared to wipe away a tear. On his side, the doctor, who wished to examine the deepest recesses of the old maid's heart before coming to any determination with respect to her, took upon himself to utter a sort of sermon

on the duties of aunts towards their nephews. But by degrees, as the sermon was progressing, and the unctuous words fell from the doctor's lips, the arid eyes of the old maid drank up the imperceptible tear which had moistened them; all her features resumed the dryness of parchment, with which they appeared to be covered; she raised her left hand to the height of her pointed chin, and with the right hand she began to calculate on her skinny fingers the quantity of pence which her letting of chairs produced to her per annum. So that, chance having so directed it that her calculation had terminated at the same time with the doctor's sermon, she could reply at the very moment, that whatever might have been the love she entertained for her poor sister, and the degree of interest she might feel for her dear nephew, the mediocrity of her receipts did not permit her, notwithstanding her double title of aunt and godmother, to incur any increased expense.

The doctor, however, was prepared for this refusal. It did not, therefore, in any way surprise him. He was a great advocate for new ideas; and as the first volume of Lavater had just then appeared, he had already applied the physiognomic doctrines of the Zurich philosopher to the yellow and skinny features of Mademoiselle Angelique.

The result of this examination was that the doctor felt assured, from the small, sharp eyes of the old maid, her long and pinched-up nose and thin lips, that she united in her single person the three sins of avarice, selfishness, and hypocrisy.

Her answer, as we have said, did not cause any species of astonishment. However, he wished to convince himself, in his quality of observer of human nature, how far the devotee would carry the development of these three defects.

"But, mademoiselle," said he, "Ange Pitou is a poor orphan child, the son of your own brother, and in the name of humanity you cannot abandon your brother's son to be dependent on public charity."

"Well, now, listen to me, Monsieur Gilbert," said the old maid; "it would be an increase of expense of at least six sous a day, and that at the lowest calculation; for that great fellow would eat at least a pound of bread a day."

Pitou made a wry face: he was in the habit of eating a pound and a half at his breakfast alone.

"And without calculating the soap for his washing," added Mademoiselle Angelique; "and I recollect that he is a sad one for dirtying clothes."

In fact, Pitou did sadly dirty his clothes, and that is very conceivable, when we remember the life he had led, climbing trees and lying down in marshes; but we must render him this justice, that he tore his clothes even more than he soiled them.

"Oh, fie, mademoiselle!" cried the doctor; "fie, Mademoiselle Angelique! Can you, who so well practise Christian charity, enter into such minute calculations with regard to your own nephew?"

"And without calculating the cost of his clothes," cried the old devotee, most energetically, who suddenly remembered having seen her sister Madeline busily employed in sewing patches on her nephew's jacket, and knee-caps on his small-clothes.

"Then," said the doctor, "am I to understand that you refuse to take charge of your nephew? The orphan who has been repulsed from his aunt's threshold will be compelled to beg for alms at the threshold of strangers."

Mademoiselle Angelique, notwithstanding her avarice, was alive to the odium which would naturally attach to her if from her refusal to receive her nephew he should be compelled to have recourse to such an extremity.

"No," said she, "I will take charge of him."

"Ah!" exclaimed the doctor, happy to find a single good feeling in a heart which he had thought completely withered.

"Yes," continued the devotee, "I will recommend him to the Augustine Friars at Bourg Fontaine, and he shall enter their monastery as a lay servant."

We have already said that the doctor was a philosopher. We know what was the meaning of the word philosopher in those days.

He therefore instantly resolved to snatch a neophyte from the Augustine brotherhood, and that with as much zealous fervour as the Augustines on their side could have displayed in carrying off an adept from the philosopher.

"Well, then," he rejoined, plunging his hand into his deep pocket, "since you are in such a position of pecuniary difficulty, my dear Mademoiselle Angelique, as to be compelled, from your deficiency in personal resources, to recommend your nephew to the charity of others, I will seek elsewhere for some one who can more efficaciously than yourself apply to the maintenance of your nephew the sum which I had designed for him. I am obliged to return to America. I will, before I set out, apprentice your nephew Pitou to some joiner, or a smith. He shall, however, himself choose the trade for which he feels a vocation. During my absence he will grow bigger, and on my return he will already have become acquainted with his business, and then — why, I shall see what can be made of him. Come, my child, kiss your aunt," continued the doctor, "and let us be off at once."

The doctor had not concluded the sentence when Pitou rushed towards the antiquated spinster; his long arms were extended, and he was in fact most eager to embrace his aunt, on the condition that this kiss was to be the signal between him and her of an eternal separation.

But at the words *THE SUM*, the gesture with which the doctor had accompanied it, the thrusting his hand into his pocket, the silvery sound which that hand had incontinently given to a heap of crown pieces, the amount of which might have been estimated by the tension of the pocket, the old maid had felt the fire of cupidity mount even to her heart.

"Oh!" cried she, "my dear Monsieur Gilbert, you must be well aware of one thing."

"And what is that?" asked the doctor.

"Why, good Heaven! that no one in the world can love this poor child half so much as I do."

And entwining her scraggy arms round Pitou's neck, she imprinted a sour kiss on each of his cheeks, which made him shudder from the tips of his toes to the roots of his hair.

"Oh, certainly," replied the doctor, "I know that well, and I so little doubted your affection for him that I brought him at once to you as his natural support. But that which you have just said to me, dear mademoiselle, has convinced me at the same time of your good will and of your inability, and I see clearly that you are too poor to aid those who are poorer than yourself."

"Why, my good Monsieur Gilbert," rejoined the old devotee, "there is a merciful God in heaven, and from heaven does He not feed all His creatures?"

"That is true," replied Gilbert; "but although He gives food to the ravens, He does not put out orphans as apprentices. Now, this is what must be done for Ange Pitou, and this, with your small means, would doubtless cost you too much."

"But yet, if you were to give that sum, good Monsieur Gilbert."

"What sum?"

"The sum of which you spoke, the sum which is there in your pocket," added the devotee, stretching her crooked finger towards the doctor's coat.

"I will assuredly give it, dear Mademoiselle Angelique," said the doctor; "but I forewarn you it will be on one condition."

"And what is that?"

"That the boy shall have a profession."

"He shall have one, and that I promise you on the faith of Angelique Pitou, most worthy doctor," cried the devotee, her eyes riveted on the pocket which was swaying to and fro.

"You promise it?"

"I promise you it shall be so."

"Seriously, is it not?"

"On the truth of the living God, my dear Monsieur Gilbert, I swear to do it."

And Mademoiselle Angelique horizontally extended her emaciated hand.

"Well, then, be it so," said the doctor, drawing from his pocket a well-rounded bag; "I am ready to give the money, as you see. On your side, are you ready to make yourself responsible to me for the child?"

"Upon the true cross, Monsieur Gilbert."

"Do not let us swear so much, dear mademoiselle, but let us sign a little more."

"I will sign, Monsieur Gilbert, I will sign."

"Before a notary?"

"Before a notary."

"Well, then, let us go at once to Papa Niguet."

Papa Niguet, to whom, thanks to his long acquaintance with him, the doctor applied this friendly title, was, as those know who are familiar with our work entitled "Memoirs of a Physician," the notary of greatest reputation in the town.

Mademoiselle Angelique, of whom Master Niguet was also the notary, had no objection to offer to the choice made by the doctor; she followed him, therefore, to the notary's office. There the scrivener registered the promise made by Mademoiselle Rose Angelique Pitou, to take charge of, and to place in the exercise of an honourable profession, Louis Ange Pitou, her nephew, and so doing, should annually receive the sum of two hundred livres. The contract was made for five years; the doctor deposited eight hundred livres in the hands of the notary, the other two hundred were to be paid to Mademoiselle Angelique in advance.

The following day the doctor left Villers-Cotterêts, after having settled some accounts with one of his farmers,

with regard to whom we shall speak hereafter. And Mademoiselle Pitou, pouncing like a vulture upon the aforesaid two hundred livres payable in advance, deposited eight golden louis in the cushion of her arm-chair.

As to the eight livres which remained, they waited in a small delft saucer which had, during the last thirty or forty years, been the receptacle of clouds of coins of every description, until the harvest of the following two or three Sundays had made up the sum of twenty-four livres, on attaining which, as we have already stated, the above named sum underwent the golden metamorphosis, and passed from the saucer into the arm-chair.

CHAPTER III.

ANGE PITOU AT HIS AUNT'S.

WE have observed the very slight degree of inclination which Ange Pitou felt towards a long continued sojourn with his Aunt Angelique; the poor child, endowed with instinct equal, and perhaps superior, to that of the animals against whom he continually made war, had divined at once, we will not say all the disappointments — we have seen that he did not for a single moment delude himself upon the subject — but all the vexations, tribulations, and annoyances to which he would be exposed.

In the first place — but we must admit that this was by no means the reason which most influenced Pitou to dislike his aunt — Doctor Gilbert having left Villers-Cotterêts, there never was a word said about placing the child as an apprentice. The good notary had indeed given her a hint or two with regard to her formal obligation; but Mademoiselle Angelique had replied that her nephew was very young, and, above all, that his health was too delicate to be subjected to labour which would probably be beyond his strength. The notary, on hearing this observation, had in good faith admired the kindness of heart of Mademoiselle Pitou, and had deferred taking any steps as to the apprenticeship until the following year. There was no time lost, the child being then only in his twelfth year.

Once installed at his aunt's, and while the latter was ruminating as to the mode she should adopt whereby to make the most of her dear nephew, Pitou, who once more found himself in his forest, or very near to it, had already

made his topographical observations in order to lead the same life at Villers-Cotterêts as at Haramont.

In fact, he had made a circuit of the neighbourhood, in which he had convinced himself that the best pools were those on the road to Dampoux, that to Compiègne, and that to Vivières, and that the best district for game was that of the Bruyère-aux-Loups.

Pitou, having made this survey, took all the necessary measures for pursuing his juvenile sport.

The thing most easy to be procured, as it did not require any outlay of capital, was bird-lime; the bark of the holly, brayed in a mortar and steeped in water, gave the lime; and as to the twigs to be limed, they were to be found by thousands on every birch tree in the neighbourhood. Pitou therefore manufactured, without saying a word to any one on the subject, a thousand of limed twigs and a pot of glue of the first quality; and one fine morning, after having the previous evening taken, on his aunt's account at the baker's, a four-pound loaf, he set off at daybreak, remained out the whole day, and returned home when the evening had closed in.

Pitou had not formed such a resolution without duly calculating the effect it would produce. He had foreseen a tempest. Without possessing the wisdom of Socrates, he knew the temper of his Aunt Angelique as well as the illustrious tutor of Alcibiades knew that of his wife Xantippe.

Pitou had not deceived himself in his foresight, but he thought he would be able to brave the storm by presenting to the old devotee the produce of his day's sport; only he had not been able to foretell from what spot the thunder would be hurled at him.

The thunderbolt struck him immediately on entering the house.

Mademoiselle Angelique had ensconced herself behind the door, that she might not miss her nephew as he entered, so that at the very moment he ventured to put his foot into

the room, he received a cuff upon the occiput, and in which, without further information, he at once recognised the withered hand of the old devotee.

Fortunately, Pitou's head was a tolerably hard one, and, although the blow had scarcely staggered him, he made believe, in order to mollify his aunt, whose anger had increased from having hurt her fingers in striking with such violence, to fall, stumbling as he went, at the opposite end of the room; there, seated on the floor, and seeing that his aunt was returning to the assault, her distaff in her hand, he hastened to draw from his pocket the talisman on which he had relied to allay the storm, and obtain pardon for his flight. And this was two dozen of birds, among which were a dozen redbreasts and half a dozen thrushes.

Mademoiselle Angelique, perfectly astounded, opened her eyes widely, continuing to scold for form's sake; but although still scolding, she took possession of her nephew's sport, retreating three paces towards the lamp.

"What is all this?" she asked.

"You must see clearly enough, my dear little Aunt Angelique," replied Pitou, "that they are birds."

"Good to eat?" eagerly inquired the old maid, who, in her quality of devotee, was naturally a great eater.

"Good to eat!" reiterated Pitou; "well, that is singular. Redbreasts and thrushes good to eat! I believe they are, indeed!"

"And where did you steal these birds, you little wretch?"

"I did not steal them; I caught them."

"Caught them! how?"

"By lime-twigging them."

"Lime-twigging, — what do you mean by that?"

Pitou looked at his aunt with an air of astonishment; he could not comprehend that the education of any person in existence could have been so neglected as not to know the meaning of lime-twigging.

"Lime-twigging?" said he; "why, zounds! 'tis lime-twigging."

"Yes; but, saucy fellow, I do not understand what you mean by lime-twigging."

"Well, you see, aunt, in the forest here there are at least thirty small pools; you place the lime twigs around them, and when the birds go to drink there, as they do not, poor silly things, know anything about them, they run their heads into them and are caught."

"By what?"

"By the bird-lime."

"Ah, ah!" exclaimed Aunt Angelique, "I understand; but who gave you the money?"

"Money!" cried Pitou, astonished that any one could have believed that he had ever possessed a penny; "money, Aunt Angelique?"

"Yes."

"No one."

"But where did you buy the bird-lime, then?"

"I made it myself."

"And the lime twigs?"

"I made them also, to be sure."

"Therefore these birds —"

"Well, aunt?"

"Cost you nothing?"

"The trouble of stooping to pick them up."

"And can you go often to these pools?"

"One might go every day."

"Good!"

"Only, it would not do."

"What would not do?"

"To go there every day."

"And for what reason?"

"Why, because it would ruin it."

"Ruin what?"

"The lime-twigging. You understand, Aunt Angelique, that the birds which are caught —"

"Well?"

"Well, they can't return to the pool."

"That is true," said the aunt.

This was the first time since Pitou had lived with her that Aunt Angelique had allowed her nephew was in the right, and this unaccustomed approbation perfectly delighted him.

"But," said he, "the days that one does not go to the pools one goes somewhere else. The days we do not catch birds, we catch something else."

"And what do you catch?"

"Why, we catch rabbits."

"Rabbits?"

"Yes; we eat the rabbits and sell their skins. A rabbit-skin is worth two sous."

Aunt Angelique gazed at her nephew with astonished eyes; she had never considered him so great an economist. Pitou had suddenly revealed himself.

"But will it not be my business to sell the skins?"

"Undoubtedly," replied Pitou; "as Mamma Madeline used to do."

It had never entered the mind of the boy that he could claim any part of the produce of his sport excepting that which he consumed.

"And when will you go out to catch rabbits?"

"Ah! that's another matter, — when I can get the wires," replied Pitou.

"Well, then, make the wires."

Pitou shook his head.

"Why, you made the bird-lime and the twigs."

"Oh, yes, I can make bird-lime, and I can set the twigs, but I cannot make brass wire; that is bought ready made at the grocer's."

"And how much does it cost?"

"Oh! for four sous," replied Pitou, calculating upon his fingers, "I could make at least two dozen."

"And with two dozen how many rabbits could you catch?"

"That is as it may happen, — four, five, six, perhaps, —

and they can be used over and over again if the game-keeper does not find them."

"See, now, here are four sous," said Aunt Angelique; "go and buy some brass wire at Monsieur Dambrun's, and go to-morrow and catch rabbits."

"I will lay them to-morrow," said Pitou "but it will only be the next morning that I shall know whether I have caught any."

"Well, be it so; but go and buy the wire."

Brass wire was cheaper at Villers-Cotterêts than in the country, seeing that the grocers at Haramont purchased their supplies in the town; Pitou, therefore bought wire enough for twenty-four snares for three sous. He took the remaining penny back to his aunt.

This unexpected probity in her nephew almost touched the heart of the old maid. For a moment she had the idea, the intention, of bestowing upon her nephew the penny which he had not expended; unfortunately for Pitou, it was one that had been beaten out with a hammer, and which, in the dusk, might be passed for a two-sous piece. Mademoiselle Angelique thought it would never do to dispossess herself of a coin by which she could make cent per cent, and she let it drop again into her pocket.

Pitou had remarked this hesitation, but had not analysed it; he never could have imagined that his aunt would give him a penny.

He at once set to work to make his wires. The next day he asked his aunt for a bag.

"What for?" inquired Mademoiselle Angelique.

"Because I want it," replied Pitou. — Pitou was full of mystery.

Mademoiselle Angelique gave him the required bag, put into it the provision of bread and cheese which was to serve for breakfast and dinner to her nephew, who set out very early for the Bruyère-aux-Loups.

As to Aunt Angelique, she set to work to pick the twelve redbreasts, which she had destined for her own breakfast

and dinner. She carried two thrushes to the Abbé Fortier, and sold the remaining four to the host of the "Golden Ball," who paid her three sous apiece for them, promising her to take as many as she would bring him at the same price.

Aunt Angelique returned home transported with joy. The blessing of Heaven had entered beneath her roof with Ange Pitou.

"Ah!" cried she, while eating her robin-redbreasts, which were as fat as ortolans and as delicate as beccaficos, "people are right in saying that a good deed never goes unrewarded."

In the evening Ange returned; his bag, which was magnificently rounded, he carried on his shoulders. On this occasion Aunt Angelique did not waylay him behind the door, but waited for him on the threshold, and instead of giving him a box on the ear, she received the lad with a grimace which very much resembled a smile.

"Here I am!" cried Pitou, on entering the room with all that firmness which denotes a conviction of having well employed one's time.

"You and your bag," said Aunt Angelique.

"I and my bag," said Pitou.

"And what have you in your bag?" inquired Aunt Angelique, stretching forth her hand with curiosity.

"Beech mast,"¹ said Pitou.

"Beech mast!"

"Undoubtedly; you must understand, Aunt Angelique, that if old Father La Jeunesse, the gamekeeper at the Bruyère-aux-Loups, had seen me prowling over his grounds

¹ Beech mast, we must inform our readers who are less acquainted with forest terms than we are, is the fruit of the beech tree. This fruit, of which a very good sort of oil is made, is to the poor a species of manna, which during two months of the year falls for them from heaven.

[Dumas should also have told his readers that beech mast is excellent for pigs, and that pheasants, and indeed most kinds of game, are very fond of it. — TRANSLATOR.]

without my bag, he would have said to me, 'What do you come here after, you little vagabond?' And this without calculating that he might have suspected something; while having my bag, were he to ask me what I was doing there, I should say to him, 'Why, I am come to gather mast, — is it forbidden to gather mast?' 'No.' 'Well, then, if it is not forbidden, you have nothing to say.' And indeed, should he say anything, Father La Jeunesse would be in the wrong."

"Then you have spent your whole day in gathering mast instead of laying your wires, you idle fellow!" exclaimed Aunt Angelique angrily, who, amidst all the cunning of her nephew, thought that the rabbits were escaping her.

"On the contrary, I laid my snares while gathering the mast, so that he saw me at work at it."

"And did he say nothing to you?"

"Oh, yes; he said to me, 'You will present my compliments to your aunt, Pitou.' Hey! Is not Father La Jeunesse a kind, good man?"

"But the rabbits?" again repeated the old devotee, whom nothing could divert from her fixed idea.

"The rabbits? Why, the moon will rise at midnight, and at one o'clock I will go and see if there are any caught."

"Where?"

"In the woods."

"How! would you go into the woods at one o'clock in the morning?"

"To be sure."

"And without being afraid?"

"Afraid! of what?"

Angelique was as much astounded at Pitou's courage as she had been astonished at his calculations.

The fact is, that Pitou, as simple as a child of nature, knew nothing of those fictitious dangers which terrify children born in cities.

Therefore at midnight he went his way, walking along

the churchyard wall without once looking back. The innocent youth who had never offended, at least according to his ideas of independence, either God or man, feared not the dead more than he did the living.

There was only one person of whom he felt any sort of apprehension, and this was Father La Jeunesse; and therefore did he take the precaution to go somewhat out of his way to pass by his house. As the doors and shutters were all closed, and there was no light to be perceived, Pitou, in order to assure himself that the keeper was really at home and not upon the watch, began to imitate the barking of a dog, and so perfectly, that Ronflot, the keeper's terrier, was deceived by it, and answered it by giving tongue with all his might, and by sniffing the air under the door.

From that moment Pitou was perfectly reassured; as Ronflot was at home, Father La Jeunesse must be there also. Ronflot and Father La Jeunesse were inseparable; and at the moment the one was seen, it was certain that the other would soon make his appearance.

Pitou, being perfectly satisfied of this fact, went on to the Bruyère-aux-Loups. The snares had done their work; two rabbits had been caught and strangled.

Pitou put them into the capacious pocket of that coat, which, then too long for him, was destined within a year to become too short, and then returned to his aunt's house.

The old maid had gone to bed; but her cupidity had kept her awake; like Perrette, she had been calculating what her rabbit-skins might produce, and this calculation had led her on so far that she had not been able to close her eyes; and therefore was it with nervous tremulation that she asked the boy what success he had had.

"A couple," said he. "Ah, the deuce! Aunt Angelique, it is not my fault that I have not brought more; but it appears that Father Jeunesse's rabbits are of a cunning sort."

The hopes of Aunt Angelique were fulfilled, and even

more. She seized, trembling with joy, the two unlucky quadrupeds and examined their skins, which had remained intact, and locked them up in her meat-safe, which never had seen such provisions as those it had contained since Pitou had hit upon the idea of supplying it.

Then, in a very honeyed tone, she advised Pitou to go to bed, which the lad, who was much fatigued, did instantly, and that without even asking for his supper, which raised him greatly in the opinion of his aunt.

Two days after this Pitou renewed his attempts, and on this occasion was more fortunate than the first. He brought home three rabbits. Two of them took the road to the Golden Ball, and the third that of the presbytery. Aunt Angelique was very attentive to the Abbé Fortier, who on his side strongly recommended her to the pious souls of the parish.

Things went on in this manner during three or four months. Aunt Angelique was enchanted, and Pitou found his position somewhat supportable. In fact, with the exception of the tender cares of his mother, Pitou led nearly the same life at Villers-Cotterêts which he had done at Haramont. But an unexpected circumstance, which, however, might have been foreseen, at once dashed to the ground the milk pitcher of the aunt, and put a stop to the excursions of the nephew.

A letter had been received from Dr. Gilbert, dated from New York. On placing his foot on the soil of the United States the philosophic traveller had not forgotten his *protégé*. He had written to Master Niguet, the notary, to inquire whether his instructions had been carried into effect, and to claim the execution of the agreement if they had not been, or to cancel it altogether, if the old aunt would not abide by her engagements.

The case was a serious one; the responsibility of the public officer was at stake; he presented himself at the house of Aunt Pitou, and, with the doctor's letter in his hand, called upon her to perform the promise she had made.

There was no backing out; all allegations as to ill health were at once belied by the physical appearance of Pitou. Pitou was tall and thin. Every standel of the forest was also thin and tall, but this did not prevent them from being in a perfectly healthy and thriving condition.

Mademoiselle Angelique asked for a delay of eight days, in order to make up her mind as to the trade or occupation in which she should place her nephew.

Pitou was quite as sorrowful as his aunt. The mode of life he led appeared to him a very excellent one, and he did not desire any other.

During these eight days there was no thought of going bird-catching or poaching; moreover, the winter had arrived, and in winter the birds find water everywhere; but some snow had fallen, and while that was on the ground Pitou did not dare go out to lay his snares. Snow retains the impression of footsteps, and Pitou possessed a pair of feet so huge that they gave Father La Jeunesse the greatest possible chance of ascertaining in four-and-twenty hours who was the skilful poacher who had depopulated his rabbit warren.

During these eight days the claws of the old maid again showed themselves. Pitou had once more found the aunt of former days, she who had caused him so much terror, and whom self-interest, the *primum mobile* of her whole life, had for a while rendered as smooth as velvet.

As the day for the important decision approached, the temper of the old maid became more and more crabbed, and to such a degree that, about the fifth day, Pitou sincerely desired that his aunt would immediately decide upon some trade, be it what it might, provided it should no longer be that of the scolded drudge which he had been filling in the old maid's house.

Suddenly a sublime idea struck the mind of the old woman who had been so cruelly agitated. This idea restored her equanimity, which for six days had altogether abandoned her.

This idea consisted in entreating the Abbé Fortier to receive into his school, and this without any remuneration whatever, poor Pitou, and enable him to obtain the purse for entering the seminary founded by his highness the Duke of Orléans. This was an apprenticeship which would cost nothing to Aunt Angelique; and Monsieur Fortier, without taking into calculation the thrushes, blackbirds, and rabbits with which the old devotee had so abundantly supplied him for the last month, was bound to do something more than for any other for the nephew of the chair-letter of his own church. Thus kept as under a glass frame, Ange would continue to be profitable to her at the present time, and promised to be much more so in the future.

Consequently, Ange was received into the Abbé Fortier's school without any charge for his education. This abbé was a worthy man, and not in any way interested, giving his knowledge to the poor in mind, and his money to the poor in body. He was, however, intractable on one single point: solecisms rendered him altogether furious, barbarisms would send him almost out of his mind; on these occasions he considered neither friends nor foes, neither poor nor rich, neither paying pupils nor gratuitous scholars; he struck all with agrarian impartiality and with Lacedæmonian stoicism, and as his arm was strong he struck severely.

This was well known to the parents, and it was for them to decide whether they would or would not send their sons to the Abbé Fortier's school; if they did send them there, they knew they must abandon them entirely to his mercy, for when any maternal complaint was made to him, the abbé always replied to it by this device, which he had engraved on the handle of his cane, and on that of his cat-o'-nine-tails, "*Who loves well chastises well.*"

Upon the recommendation of his aunt, Ange Pitou was therefore received by the Abbé Fortier. The old devotee, quite proud of this reception, which was much less agree-

able to Pitou, whose wandering and independent mode of life it altogether destroyed, presented herself to Master Niguet, and told him that she had not only conformed to her agreement with Dr. Gilbert, but had even gone beyond it. In fact, Dr. Gilbert had demanded for Ange Pitou an honourable means of living, and she gave him much more than this, since she gave him an excellent education. And where was it that she gave him this education? Why, in the very academy in which Sebastian Gilbert received his, and for which Master Niguet, by the doctor's orders, paid fifty francs per month.

It was indeed true that Ange Pitou received his education *gratis*; but there was no necessity whatever for letting Dr. Gilbert into this secret. The impartiality and the disinterestedness of the Abbé Fortier were well known; as his sublime Master, he stretched out his arms saying, "Suffer little children to come unto me;" only the two hands affixed to these two paternal arms were armed, the one with a rudiment, and the other with a large birch rod; so that in the greater number of instances, instead of receiving the children weeping and sending them away consoled, the Abbé Fortier saw the children approach him with terror in their countenances and sent them away weeping.

The new scholar made his entrance into the school-room with an old trunk under his arm a horn inkstand in his hand, and two or three stumps of pens stuck behind his ears. The old trunk was intended to supply, as it best might, the absence of a regular desk. The inkstand was a gift from the grocer, and Mademoiselle Angelique had picked up the stumps of pens at M. Niguet, the notary's, when she had paid him a visit the evening before.

Ange Pitou was welcomed with that fraternal gentleness which is born in children and perpetuated in grown men, that is to say with hootings. The whole time devoted to the morning class was passed in making game of him. Two of the scholars were kept for laughing at his yellow

hair, and two others for ridiculing his marvellous knees, of which we have already slightly made mention. The two latter had said that Pitou's legs looked like a well rope in which a knot had been tied. This jest had been attended with great success, had gone round the room and excited general hilarity, and consequently the susceptibility of the Abbé Fortier.

Therefore, the account being made up at noon when about to leave the school, that is to say, after having remained four hours in class, Pitou, without having addressed a single word to any one, without having done anything but gape behind his trunk, Pitou had made six enemies in the school; six enemies so much the more inveterate that he had not inflicted any wrong upon them, and therefore did they over the fire-stove, which in the school-room represented the altar of their country, swear a solemn oath, some to tear out his yellow hair, others to punch out his earthenware blue eyes, and the remainder to straighten his crooked knees.

Pitou was altogether ignorant of these hostile intentions. As he was going out he asked a boy near him why six of their comrades remained in school, when all the rest were leaving it. The boy looked askance at Pitou; called him a shabby tale-bearer, and went away, unwilling to enter into conversation with him.

Pitou asked himself how it could have happened that he, not having uttered a single word during the whole time, could be called a shabby tale-bearer. But while the class had lasted he had heard so many things said, either by the pupils or by the Abbé Fortier, which he could in no way comprehend, that he classed this accusation of his school-fellow with those things which were too elevated for him to understand.

On seeing Pitou return at noon, Aunt Angelique, with great ardour for the success of an education for which it was generally understood she made great sacrifices, inquired of him what he had learned.

Pitou replied that he had learned to remain silent. The answer was worthy of a Pythagorean; only a Pythagorean would have made it by a sign.

The new scholar returned to school at one o'clock, without too much repugnance. The hours of study in the morning had been passed by the pupils in examining the physical appearance of Pitou; those of the afternoon were employed by the professor in examining his moral capabilities. This examination being made, the Abbé Fortier remained convinced that Pitou had every possible disposition to become a Robinson Crusoe, but very little chance of ever becoming a Fontenelle or a Bossuet.

During the whole time that the class lasted, and which was much more fatiguing to the future seminarist than that of the morning, the scholars who had been punished on account of him repeatedly held up their fists to him. In all countries, whether blessed with civilisation or not, this demonstration is considered as a sign of threat. Pitou therefore determined to be on his guard.

Our hero was not mistaken. On leaving, or rather when he had left, and got clear away from all the dependencies of the collegiate house, it was notified to Pitou, before the six scholars who had been kept in the morning, that he would have to pay for the two hours of arbitrary detention, with damages, interest and capital.

Pitou at once understood that he would have to fight a pugilistic duel. Although he was far from having studied the fifth book of the *Æneid*, in which young Dares and the old Entellus give proofs of their great skill in this manly exercise before the loudly applauding Trojan fugitives, he knew something of this species of recreation, to which the country people in his village were not altogether strangers. He therefore declared that he was ready to enter the lists with either of his adversaries who might wish to begin, and to combat successively with all his six enemies. This demonstration began to raise the last comer in the consideration of his schoolfellows.

The conditions were agreed on as Pitou had proposed. A circle was soon formed round the place of combat, and the champions, the one having thrown off his jacket, the other his coat, advanced towards each other.

We have already spoken of Pitou's hands. These hands, which were by no means agreeable to look at, were still less agreeable to feel. Pitou at the end of each arm whirled round a fist equal in size to a child's head, and although boxing had not at that time been introduced in France, and consequently Pitou had not studied the elementary principles of the science, he managed to apply to one of the eyes of his adversary a blow so hermetically directed that the eye he struck was instantly surrounded by a dark bistre-coloured circle, so geometrically drawn that the most skilful mathematician could not have formed it more correctly with his compasses.

The second then presented himself. If Pitou had against him the fatigue occasioned by his first combat, on the other hand, his adversary was visibly less powerful than his former antagonist. The battle did not last long. Pitou gave a straightforward blow at his enemy's nose, and his formidable fist fell with such weight that instantly his two nostrils gave evidence of the validity of the blow by spouting forth a double stream of blood.

The third got off with merely a broken tooth; he received much less damage than the two former. The other three declared that they were satisfied. Pitou then pressed through the crowd, which drew back as he approached with the respect due to a conqueror, and he withdrew safe and sound to his own fireside, or rather to that of his aunt.

The next morning, when the three pupils reached the school, the one with his eye poached, the second with a fearfully lacerated nose, and the third with his lips swelled, the Abbé Fortier instituted an inquiry. But young collegians have their good points too. Not one of the wounded whispered a word against Pitou, and it was only through an indirect channel, that is to say, from a person who had

been a witness of the fight, but who was altogether unconnected with the school, that the Abbé Fortier learned, the following day, that it was Pitou who had done the damage to the faces of his pupils which had caused him so much uneasiness the day before.

And in fact the Abbé-Fortier was responsible to the parents, not only for the morals, but for the physical state of his pupils. Fortier had received complaints from the three families. A reparation was absolutely necessary. Pitou was kept in school three days: one day for the eye, one day for the bloody nose, and one day for the tooth.

This three days' detention suggested an ingenious idea to Mademoiselle Angelique. It was to deprive Pitou of his dinner every time that the Abbé Fortier kept him in school. This determination must necessarily have an advantageous effect on Pitou's education, since it would naturally induce him to think twice before committing a fault which would subject him to this double punishment.

Only, Pitou could never rightly comprehend why it was that he had been called a tale-bearer, when he had not opened his lips, and why it was he had been punished for beating those who had wished to beat him; but if people were to comprehend everything that happens in this world, they would lose one of the principal charms of life — that of mystery and the unforeseen.

Pitou was therefore detained three days in school, and during those three days he contented himself with his breakfast and supper.

Contented himself is not the word, for Pitou was by no means content; but our language is so poor, and the academy so severe, that we must *content* ourselves with what we have.

Only that this punishment submitted to by Pitou, without saying a word of the aggression to which he had been subjected, and to which he had only properly replied, won him the esteem of the whole school. It is true that the three majestic blows he had been seen to deliver might also have had some little influence on his schoolfellows.

From that forward the life of Pitou was pretty nearly that of most scholars, with this sole difference, that from his compositions being more defective than those of any of the rest, he was kept twice as often as any of his disciples.

But it must be said there was one thing in Pitou's nature which arose from the primary education he received, or rather from that which he did not receive, a thing which is necessary to consider as contributing at least a third to the numerous *keepings* he underwent, and this was his natural inclination for animals.

The famous trunk which his Aunt Angelique had dignified with the name of desk had become, thanks to its vastness and the numerous compartments with which Pitou had decorated its interior, a sort of Noah's ark, containing a couple of every species of climbing, crawling, or flying reptiles. There were lizards, adders, ant-eaters, beetles, and frogs, which reptiles became so much dearer to Pitou from their being the cause of his being subjected to punishment more or less severe.

It was in his walks during the week that Pitou made collections for his menagerie. He had wished for salamanders, which were very popular at Villers-Cotterêts, being the crest of François I., and who had them sculptured on every chimney-piece in the chateau. He had succeeded in obtaining them; only one thing had strongly pre-occupied his mind, and he ended by placing this thing among the number of those which were beyond his intelligence; it was that he had constantly found in the water these reptiles which poets have pretended exist only in fire. This circumstance had given to Pitou, who was a lad of precise mind, a profound contempt for poets.

Pitou, being the proprietor of two salamanders, set to work to find a chameleon; but this time his search was altogether vain, and success did not attend his labours. Pitou at last concluded from these unfruitful researches that the chameleon did not exist, or, at all events, that it existed in some other latitude.

This point being settled, Pitou did not obstinately continue his search for the chameleon.

The two other thirds of Pitou's *keepings-in* were occasioned by those accursed solecisms, and those confounded barbarisms, which sprang up in the themes written by Pitou as tares do in a field of wheat.

As to Sundays and Thursdays, days when there was no attendance at school, he had continued to employ them in laying his lime-twigs, or in poaching; only, as Pitou was still growing taller, as he was already five feet six, and sixteen years of age, a circumstance occurred which somewhat withdrew Pitou's attention from his favourite occupations.

Upon the road to the Wolf's Heath is situated a small village, the same, perhaps, which gave a name to the beautiful Anne d'Heilly, the mistress of François I.

Near this village stood the farmhouse of Father Billot, as he was called throughout the neighbourhood, and at the door of this farmhouse was standing, no doubt by chance, but almost every time when Pitou passed and repassed, a pretty girl from seventeen to eighteen years of age, fresh-coloured, lively, jovial, and who was called by her baptismal name, Catherine, but still more frequently after her father's name, La Billote.

Pitou began by bowing to La Billote; afterwards he by degrees became emboldened, and smiled while he was bowing; then at last, one fine day, after having bowed, after having smiled, he stopped, and, although blushing deeply, ventured to stammer out the following words, which he considered as great audacity on his part:—

“Good day, Mademoiselle Catherine.”

Catherine was a good, kind-hearted girl, and she welcomed Pitou as an old acquaintance. He was in point of fact an old acquaintance, for during two or three years she had seen him passing and repassing before the farm gate at least once a week. Only that Catherine saw Pitou, and Pitou did not see Catherine. The reason was, that at first

when Pitou used to pass by the farm in this manner Catherine was sixteen years old and Pitou but fourteen. We have just seen what happened when Pitou in his turn had attained his sixteenth year.

By degrees Catherine had learned to appreciate the talents of Pitou, for Pitou had given her evidence of his talents by offering to her his finest birds and his fattest rabbits. The result of this was that Catherine complimented him upon these talents, and that Pitou, who was the more sensible to compliments from his being so little habituated to receive them, allowed the charm of novelty to influence him, and instead of going on straightforward, as heretofore, to the Wolf's Heath, he would stop half-way, and instead of employing the whole of his day in picking up beech mast and in laying his wires, he would lose his time in prowling round Father Billot's farm, in the hope of seeing Catherine, were it only for a moment.

The result of this was a very sensible diminution in the produce of rabbit-skins, and a complete scarcity of robin-redbreasts and thrushes.

Aunt Angelique complained of this. Pitou represented to her that the rabbits had become mistrustful, and that the birds, who had found out the secret of his lime-twigs, now drank out of hollows of trees, or out of leaves that retained the water.

There was one consideration which consoled Aunt Angelique for this increase in the intelligence of the rabbits and the cunning of the birds, which she attributed to the progress of philosophy, and this was that her nephew would obtain the purse, enter the seminary, pass three years there, and on leaving it would be an abbé. Now, being housekeeper to an abbé had been the constant aim of Mademoiselle Angelique's ambition.

This ambition could not fail of being gratified, for Ange Pitou, having once become an abbé, could not do otherwise than take his aunt for housekeeper, and above all after what his aunt had done for him.

The only thing which disturbed the golden dreams of the old maid was, when speaking of this hope to the Abbé Fortier, the latter replied, shaking his head, —

“My dear Demoiselle Pitou, in order to become an abbé, your nephew should give himself up less to the study of natural history, and much more to *De Viris Illustribus*, or to the *Selectæ e Profanis Scriptoribus*.”

“And which means?” said Mademoiselle Angelique, inquiringly.

“That he makes too many barbarisms, and infinitely too many solecisms,” replied the Abbé Fortier.

An answer which left Mademoiselle Angelique in the most afflicting state of vagueness and uncertainty.

CHAPTER IV.

OF THE INFLUENCE WHICH A BARBARISM AND SEVEN SOLE-
CISMS MAY HAVE UPON THE WHOLE LIFE OF A MAN.

THESE details were indispensable to the reader, whatever be the degree of intelligence we suppose him to possess, in order that he might comprehend the whole horror of the position in which Pitou found himself on being finally expelled from the school.

With one arm hanging down, the other maintaining the equilibrium of the trunk upon his head, his ears still ringing with the furious vituperations of the Abbé Fortier, he slowly directed his steps towards the Pleux, in a state of meditation which was nothing more than stupor carried to the highest possible degree.

At last an idea presented itself to his imagination, and four words, which composed his whole thought, escaped his lips, —

“Oh Lord! my aunt!”

And indeed what would Mademoiselle Angelique Pitou say to this complete overthrow of all her hopes?

However, Ange Pitou knew nothing of the projects of the old maid, excepting as a faithful dog surmises the intentions of his master, that is to say, by an inspection of his physiognomy. Instinct is a most valuable guide, — it seldom deceives; while reason, on the contrary, may be led astray by the imagination.

The result of these reflections on the part of Ange Pitou, and which had given birth to the doleful exclamation we have given above, was the apprehension of the violent outbreak of discontent the old maid would give way to on

receiving the fatal news. Now, he knew from sad experience the result of discontent in Mademoiselle Angelique. Only upon this occasion, the cause of discontent arising from an incalculably important event, the result would attain a degree altogether incalculable.

It was under these terrific impressions that Pitou entered the Pleux. He had taken a quarter of an hour to traverse the distance between the great gate at the Abbé Fortier's and the entrance to this street, and yet it was scarcely three hundred yards.

At that moment the church clock struck twelve; he then perceived that his final conversation with the Abbé Fortier and the slowness with which he had walked, had delayed him in all sixty minutes, and that consequently he was half an hour later than the time at which no more dinner was to be had in Aunt Angelique's abode.

We have already said that such was the salutary restraint which Aunt Angelique had added to his being kept in school, and on the wild ramblings of her nephew; it was thus that in the course of a year she managed to economise some sixty dinners at the expense of her poor nephew's stomach.

But this time, that which rendered more uneasy the retarded schoolboy, was not the loss of his aunt's meagre dinner, although his breakfast had been meagre enough, for his heart was too full to allow him to perceive the emptiness of his stomach.

There is a frightful torment, well known to a student, however perverse he may be, and this is the illegitimate hiding in some retired corner after being expelled from college; it is the definitive and compelled holiday which he is constrained to take advantage of, while his fellow students pass by him with their books and writings under their arm, proceeding to their daily task. That college, formerly so hated, then assumes a most desirable form; the scholar occupies his mind with the great affairs of themes and exercises, to which he before so little directed

his attention, and which are being proceeded with in his absence. There is a strong similarity between a pupil so expelled by his professor, and a man who has been excommunicated by the Church for his impiety, and who no longer has a right to enter one, although burning with desire to hear a mass.

And this was why, the nearer he approached his aunt's house, his residence in that house appeared the more frightful to poor Pitou. And this was why, for the first time in his life, his imagination pictured to him the school as a terrestrial paradise, from which the Abbé Fortier, as the exterminating angel, had driven him forth, with his cat-o'-nine-tails wielded as a flaming sword.

But yet, slowly as he walked, and although he halted at every ten steps he took, — halts which became still longer as he approached nearer, — he could not avoid at last reaching the threshold of that most formidable house. Pitou then reached the threshold with shuffling feet, and mechanically rubbing his hand on the seam of his nether garment.

"Ah! Aunt Angelique, I am really very sick," said he, in order to stop her raillery or her reproaches, and perhaps also to induce her to pity him, poor boy.

"Good!" said Angelique. "I well know what your sickness is; and it would be cured at once by putting back the hands of the clock an hour and half."

"Oh! good heavens, no!" cried Pitou; "for I am not hungry."

Aunt Angelique was surprised and almost anxious. Sickness equally alarms affectionate mothers and crabbed stepmothers, — affectionate mothers from the dangers caused by sickness, and stepmothers from the heavy pulls it makes upon their purse.

"Well! what is the matter? Come, now, speak out at once," said the old maid.

On hearing these words, which were, however, pronounced without any very tender sympathy, Ange Pitou

burst into tears and it must be acknowledged that the wry faces he made when proceeding from complaints to tears were the most terrifically ugly wry faces that could be seen.

"Oh! my good aunt," cried he, sobbing, "a great misfortune has happened to me."

"And what is it?" asked the old maid.

"The Abbé Fortier has sent me away," replied Ange, sobbing so violently that he was scarcely intelligible.

"Sent you away?" repeated Mademoiselle Angelique, as if she had not perfectly comprehended what he said.

"Yes, aunt."

"And from where has he sent you?"

"From the school."

And Pitou's sobs redoubled.

"From the school?"

"Yes, aunt."

"What! altogether?"

"Yes, aunt."

"So there is no longer any examination, no competition, no purse, no seminary."

Pitou's sobs were changed into perfect howlings.

Mademoiselle Angelique looked at him, as if she would read the very heart of her nephew, to ascertain the cause of his dismissal.

"I will wager that you have again been among the bushes, instead of going to school. I would wager that you have again been prowling about Father Billot's farm Oh, fie! and a future abbé!"

Ange shook his head.

"You are lying," cried the old maid, whose anger augmented in proportion as she acquired the certainty that the state of matters was very serious. "You are lying. Only last Sunday you were seen again in the Lane of Sighs, with La Billote."

It was Mademoiselle Angelique who was lying. But devotees have, in all ages, considered themselves authorised

to lie, in virtue of that Jesuitical axiom, "It is permitted to assert that which is false, in order to discover that which is true."

"No one could have seen me in the Lane of Sighs," replied Pitou; "that is impossible, for we were walking near the orangery."

"Ah, wretch! you see that you were with her."

"But, aunt," rejoined Pitou, blushing, "Mademoiselle Billot has nothing to do with this question."

"Yes, call her mademoiselle, in order to conceal your impure conduct. But I will let this minx's confessor know all about it."

"But, aunt, I swear to you that Mademoiselle Billot is not a minx."

"Ah! you defend her, when it is you that stand in need of being excused. Oh, yes; you understand each other better and better. What are we coming to, good Heaven! and children only sixteen years old."

"Aunt, so far from there being any understanding between me and Catherine, it is Catherine who always drives me away from her."

"Ah! you see you are cutting your own throat; for now you call her Catherine, right out. Yes, she drives you away from her, hypocrite, when people are looking at you."

"Ho! ho!" said Pitou to himself, illuminated by this idea. "Well, that is true; I had never thought of that."

"Ah, there again!" said the old maid, taking advantage of the ingenuous exclamation of her nephew to prove his connivance with La Billote; "but let me manage it. I will soon put all this to rights again. Monsieur Fortier is her confessor. I will beg him to have you shut up in prison, and order you to live on bread and water for a fortnight; as to Mademoiselle Catherine, if she requires a convent to moderate her passion for you, well, she shall have a taste of it. We will send her to St. Remy."

The old maid uttered these last words with such author-

ity, and with such conviction of her power, that they made Pitou tremble.

"My good aunt," cried he, clasping his hands, "you are mistaken. I swear to you, if you believe that Mademoiselle Billot has anything to do with the misfortune that has befallen me."

"Impurity is the mother of all vices," sententiously rejoined Mademoiselle Angelique.

"Aunt, I again tell you that the Abbé Fortier did not send me away because I was impure; but he has dismissed me because I make too many barbarisms, mingled with solecisms, which every now and then escape me, and which deprive me, as he says, of all chance of obtaining the purse for the seminary."

"All chance, say you? Then you will not have that purse; then you will not be an abbé; then I shall not be your housekeeper?"

"Ah, good Heaven, no! dear aunt."

"And what is to become of you, then?" cried the old maid, in a savage tone.

"I know not," cried Pitou piteously, raising his eyes to heaven. "Whatever it may please Providence to order," he added.

"Ah! Providence, you say! I see how it is," exclaimed Mademoiselle Angelique; "some one has been exciting his brain; some one has been talking to him of these new ideas; some one has been endeavouring to fill him with these principles of philosophy."

"It cannot be that, aunt; because no one gets into philosophy before having gone through his rhetoric; and I have never yet been able to get even so far as that."

"Oh, yes!—jest—jest! It is not of that philosophy that I am speaking. I speak of the philosophy of the philosophers, you wretch! I speak of the philosophy of Monsieur Arouet; I speak of the philosophy of Monsieur Jean Jacques; of the philosophy of Monsieur Diderot, who wrote '*La Religieuse*.'"

Mademoiselle Angelique crossed herself.

"La Religieuse!" cried Pitou; "what is that, aunt?"

"You have read it, wretch!"

"I swear to you, aunt, that I have not."

"And this is the reason why you will not go into the church."

"Aunt, aunt, you are mistaken. It is the church that will not admit me."

"Why, decidedly, this child is a perfect serpent. He even dares to reply."

"No, aunt; I answer, and that is all."

"Oh, he is lost!" exclaimed Mademoiselle Angelique, with all the signs of most profound discouragement, and falling into her favourite arm-chair.

In fact, "He is lost!" merely signified, "I am lost!"

The danger was imminent. Aunt Angelique formed an extreme resolve. She rose as if some secret spring had forced her to her feet, and ran off to the Abbé Fortier, to ask him for an explanation, and, above all, to make a last effort to get him to change his determination.

Pitou followed his aunt with his eyes till she had reached the door; and when she had disappeared, he went to the threshold and watched her walking with extraordinary rapidity towards the Rue de Soissons. He was surprised at the quickness of her movements; but he had no longer any doubt as to the intentions of Mademoiselle Angelique, and was convinced that she was going to his professor's house.

He could, therefore, calculate on at least a quarter of an hour's tranquillity. Pitou thought of making a good use of this quarter of an hour which Providence had granted to him; he snatched up the remainder of his aunt's dinner to feed his lizards, caught two or three flies for his ants and frogs; then, opening successively a hutch and a cupboard, he set about feeding himself, for with solitude his appetite had returned to him.

Having arranged all these matters, he returned to watch

at the door, that he might not be surprised by the return of his second mother.

Mademoiselle Angelique had given herself the title of Pitou's second mother.

While he was watching, a handsome young girl passed at the end of the Pleux, going along a narrow lane which led from the end of the Rue de Soissons to that of the Rue de l'Ormet. She was seated on a pillion on the back of a horse loaded with two panniers, the one full of fowls, the other of pigeons. It was Catherine. On perceiving Pitou standing at his door, she stopped.

Pitou, according to custom, blushed, then remained with his mouth wide open, looking at, that is to say admiring her; for Mademoiselle Billot was in his eyes the most heavenly sample of human beauty.

The young girl darted a glance into the street, saluted Pitou with a little graceful nod, and continued on her way.

Pitou replied to it, trembling with satisfaction.

This little scene lasted just time enough to occupy the tall scholar's attention, who was quite lost in his contemplation, and continued eagerly gazing at the spot where Mademoiselle Catherine had appeared, so as to prevent him from perceiving his aunt when she returned from the Abbé Fortier, who suddenly seized his hand, turning pale with anger.

Ange being thus startingly awakened from his sweet dream by that electrical shock which the touch of Mademoiselle Angelique always communicated to him, turned round, and, seeing that the enraged looks of his aunt were fixed upon his hand, cast his own eyes down upon it, and saw with horror that it was holding the half of a large round of bread, upon which he had apparently spread a too generous layer of butter, with a corresponding slice of cheese, and which the sudden appearance of Mademoiselle Catherine had made him entirely forget.

Mademoiselle Angelique uttered a cry of terror, and

Pitou a groan of alarm; Angelique raised her bony hand, Pitou bobbed down his head; Angelique seized a broom handle, which unluckily was but too near her, Pitou let fall his slice of bread and butter, and took to his heels without further explanation.

These two hearts had understood each other, and had felt that henceforth there could be no communion between them.

Mademoiselle Angelique went into her house and double-locked the door. Pitou, whom the grating noise alarmed as a continuation of the storm, ran on still faster.

From this scene resulted an effect which Mademoiselle Angelique was very far from foreseeing, and which certainly Pitou in no way expected.

CHAPTER V.

A PHILOSOPHICAL FARMER.

PITOU ran as if all the demons of the infernal regions were at his heels, and in a few seconds he was outside the town.

On turning round the corner of the cemetery, he very nearly ran his head against the hind part of a horse.

"Why, good Lord!" cried a sweet voice well known to Pitou, "where are you running to at this rate, Monsieur Ange? You have very nearly made Cadet run away with me, you frightened us both so much."

"Ah, Mademoiselle Catherine!" cried Pitou, replying rather to his own thoughts than to the question of the young girl. "Ah, Mademoiselle Catherine, what a misfortune! great God, what a misfortune!"

"Oh, you quite terrify me!" said the young girl, pulling up her horse in the middle of the road. "What, then, has happened, Monsieur Ange?"

"What has happened!" said Pitou; and then, lowering his voice as if about to reveal some mysterious iniquity, "why, it is that I am not to be an abbé, mademoiselle."

But instead of receiving the fatal intelligence with all those signs of commiseration which Pitou had expected, Mademoiselle Billot gave way to a long burst of laughter.

"You are not to be an abbé?" asked Catherine.

"No," replied Pitou, in perfect consternation; "it appears that it is impossible."

"Well, then, you can be a soldier," said Catherine.

"A soldier?"

"Undoubtedly. You should not be in despair for such a trifle. Good Lord! I at first thought that you had come to announce to me the death of your aunt."

"Oh," said Pitou, feelingly, "it is precisely the same thing to me as if she were dead indeed, since she has driven me out of her house."

"I beg your pardon," said Catherine, laughing; "you have not now the satisfaction of weeping for her."

And Catherine began to laugh more heartily than before, which scandalised poor Pitou more than ever.

"But did you not hear that she has turned me out of doors?" rejoined the student, in despair.

"Well, so much the better," she replied.

"You are very happy in being able to laugh in that manner, Mademoiselle Billot; and it proves that you have a most agreeable disposition, since the sorrows of others make so little impression upon you."

"And who has told you, then, that, should a real misfortune happen to you, I would not pity you, Monsieur Ange?"

"You would pity me if a real misfortune should befall me! But do you not, then, know that I have no other resource?"

"So much the better again!" cried Catherine.

"But one must eat!" said he; "one cannot live without eating! and I, above all, for I am always hungry."

"You do not wish to work, then, Monsieur Pitou?"

"Work, and at what? Monsieur Fortier and my Aunt Angelique have told me more than a hundred times that I was fit for nothing. Ah! if they had only apprenticed me to a carpenter or a blacksmith, instead of wanting to make an abbé of me! Decidedly, now, Mademoiselle Catherine," said Pitou, with a gesture of despair, "decidedly there is a curse upon me."

"Alas!" said the young girl compassionately, for she knew, as did all the neighbourhood, Pitou's lamentable story. "There is some truth in what you have just now said, my dear Monsieur Ange; but why do you not do one thing?"

"What is it?" cried Pitou, eagerly clinging to the pro-

posal which Mademoiselle Billot was about to make, as a drowning man clings to a willow branch. "What is it; tell me?"

"You had a protector; at least, I think I have heard so."

"Doctor Gilbert."

"You were the schoolfellow of his son, since he was educated, as you have been, by the Abbé Fortier."

"I believe I was indeed, and I have more than once saved him from being thrashed."

"Well, then, why do you not write to his father? He will not abandon you."

"Why, I would certainly do so, did I know what had become of him; but your father, perhaps, knows this, Mademoiselle Billot, since Doctor Gilbert is his landlord."

"I know that he sends part of the produce of the farm to him in America, and pays the remainder to a notary at Paris."

"Ah!" said Pitou, sighing, "in America; that is very far."

"You would go to America? You?" cried the young girl, almost terrified at Pitou's resolution.

"Who, I, Mademoiselle Catherine? Never, never! If I knew where to go, and how to procure food, I should be very happy in France."

"Very happy," repeated Mademoiselle Billot.

Pitou cast down his eyes; the young girl remained silent. This silence lasted some time. Pitou was plunged in meditations which would have greatly surprised the Abbé Fortier, with all his logic.

These meditations, though rising from an obscure point, had become lucid; then they again became confused, though brilliant, like the lightning whose origin is concealed, whose source is lost.

During this time Cadet had again moved on, though at a walk, and Pitou walked at Cadet's side, with one hand leaning on one of the panniers. As to Mademoiselle Catherine, who had also become full of thought, she

allowed her reins to fall upon her courser's neck, without fearing that he would run away with her. Moreover, there were no monsters on the road, and Cadet was of a race which had no sort of relation to the steeds of Hippolytus.

Pitou stopped mechanically when the horse stopped. They had arrived at the farm.

"Well, now, is it you, Pitou?" cried a broad-shouldered man, standing somewhat proudly by the side of a pond, to which he had led his horse to drink.

"Eh! good Lord! Yes, Monsieur Billot, it is myself."

"Another misfortune has befallen this poor Pitou," said the young girl, jumping off her horse, without feeling at all uneasy as to whether her petticoat hitched or not, to show the color of her garters; "his aunt has turned him out of doors."

"And what has he done to the old bigot?" said the farmer.

"It appears that I am not strong enough in Greek."

He was boasting, the puppy. He ought to have said in Latin.

"Not strong enough in Greek!" exclaimed the broad-shouldered man. "And why should you wish to be strong in Greek?"

"To construe Theocritus and read the Iliad."

"And of what use would it be to you to construe Theocritus and read the Iliad?"

"It would be of use in making me an abbé."

"Bah!" ejaculated Monsieur Billot, "and do I know Greek? do I know Latin? do I know even French? do I know how to read? do I know how to write? That does not hinder me from sowing, from reaping, and getting my harvest into the granary."

"Yes, but you, Monsieur Billot, you are not an abbé; you are a cultivator of the earth, *agricola*, as Virgil says. *O fortunatus nimium*—"

"Well, and do you then believe that a cultivator is not equal to a black-cap; say, then, you shabby chorister you,

is he not so, particularly when this cultivator has sixty acres of good land in the sunshine, and a thousand louis in the shade ?”

“I had been always told that to be an abbé was the best thing in the world. It is true,” added Pitou, smiling with his most agreeable smile, “that I did not always listen to what was told me.”

“And I give you joy, my boy. You see that I can rhyme like any one else when I set to work. It appears to me that there is stuff in you to make something better than an abbé, and that it is a lucky thing for you not to take to that trade, particularly as times now go. Do you see now, as a farmer I know something of the weather, and the weather just now is bad for abbés.”

“Bah!” exclaimed Pitou.

“Yes, we shall have a storm,” rejoined the farmer, “and not long first, believe me. You are honest, you are learned —”

Pitou bowed, much honoured at being called learned for the first time in his life.

“You can therefore gain a livelihood without that.”

Mademoiselle Billot, while taking the fowls and pigeons out of the panniers, was listening with much interest to the dialogue between Pitou and her father.

“Gain a livelihood,” rejoined Pitou; “that appears a difficult matter to me.”

“What can you do ?”

“Do ! why I can lay lime twigs, and set wires for rabbits. I can imitate, and tolerably well, the notes of birds, can I not, Mademoiselle Catherine ?”

“Oh, that is true enough !” she replied. “He can whistle like a blackbird.”

“Yes, but all this is not a trade, a profession,” observed Father Billot.

“And that is what I say, by Heaven !”

“You swear, — that is already something.”

“How did I swear ?” said Pitou. “I beg your pardon for having done so, Monsieur Billot.”

"Oh! there is no occasion, none at all," said the farmer. "It happens also to me sometimes. Eh! thunder of heaven!" cried he, turning to his horse, "will you be quiet, hey? These devils of Perch horses, they must be always neighing and fidgeting about. But now, tell me," said he, again addressing Pitou, "are you lazy?"

"I do not know. I have never done anything but Latin and Greek, and —"

"And what?"

"And I must admit that I did not take to them **very** readily."

"So much the better," cried Billot; "that proves you are not so stupid as I thought you."

Pitou opened his eyes to an almost terrific width; it was the first time he had ever heard such an order of things advocated, and which was completely subversive of all the theories which up to that time he had been taught.

"I ask you," said Billot, "if you are so lazy as to be afraid of fatigue."

"Oh, with regard to fatigue, that is quite another thing," replied Pitou; "no, no, no; I could go ten leagues without being fatigued."

"Good! that's something, at all events," rejoined Billot; "by getting a few pounds of flesh more off your bones, you could set up for a runner."

"A few pounds more!" cried Pitou, looking at his own lanky form, his long arms and his legs, which had much the appearance of stilts: "it seems to me, Monsieur Billot, that I am thin enough as it is."

"Upon my word, my friend," cried Billot, laughing **very** heartily, "you are a perfect treasure."

It was also the first time that Pitou had been estimated at so high a price, and therefore was he advancing from surprise to surprise.

"Listen to me," said the farmer; "I ask you whether you are lazy in respect to work?"

"What sort of work?"

"Why, work in general."

"I do not know, not I; for I have never worked."

Catherine also began to laugh, but this time Père Billot took the matter in a serious point of view.

"Those rascally priests!" said he, holding his clenched fists towards the town; "and this is the way they bring up lads, in idleness and uselessness. In what way, I ask you, can this great stripling here be of service to his brethren?"

"Ah! not of much use, certainly; that I know full well," replied Pitou; "fortunately I have no brothers."

"By brethren I mean all men in general," observed Billot. "Would you, perchance, insist that all men are not brothers?"

"Oh, that I acknowledge; moreover, it is so said in the Gospel."

"And equals," continued the farmer.

"Ah! as to that," said Pitou, "that is quite another affair. If I had been the equal of Monsieur Fortier, he would not so often have thrashed me with his cat-o'-nine-tails and his cane; and if I had been the equal of my aunt, she would not have turned me out of doors."

"I tell you that all men are equal," rejoined the farmer, "and we will very soon prove it to the tyrants."

"*Tyrannis*," added Pitou.

"And the proof of this is, that I will take you into my house."

"You will take me into your house, my dear Monsieur Billot?" cried Pitou, amazed. "Is it not to make game of me that you say this?"

"No; come now, tell me, what would you require to live?"

"Bread."

"And with your bread?"

"A little butter or cheese."

"Well, well," said the farmer, "I see it will not be very expensive to keep you in food. My lad, you shall be fed."

"Monsieur Pitou," said Catherine, "had you not something to ask my father?"

"Who! I, mademoiselle! Oh, good Lord, no!"

"And why was it that you came here, then?"

"Because you were coming here."

"Ah!" cried Catherine, "that is really very gallant; but I accept compliments only at their true value. You came, Monsieur Pitou, to ask my father if he had any news of your protector."

"Ah! that is true!" replied Pitou. "Well, now, how very droll! I had forgotten that altogether."

"You are speaking of our worthy Monsieur Gilbert?" said the farmer, in a tone which evinced the very high consideration he felt for his landlord.

"Precisely," said Pitou. "But I have no longer any need of him; and since Monsieur Billot takes me into his house, I can tranquilly wait till we hear from him."

"In that case, my friend, you will not have to wait long, for he has returned."

"Really!" cried Pitou; "and when did he arrive?"

"I do not know exactly; but what I know is, that he was at Havre a week ago, for I have in my holsters a packet which comes from him, and which he sent to me as soon as he arrived, and which was delivered to me this very morning at Villers-Cotterêts; and in proof of that here it is."

"Who was it told you that it was from him, father?" said Catherine.

"Why, zounds! since there is a letter in the packet —"

"Excuse me, father," said Catherine, smiling, "but I thought that you could not read. I only say this, father, because you make a boast of not knowing how to read."

"Yes, I do boast of it. I wish that people should say, 'Father Billot owes nothing to any man, — not even a schoolmaster. Father Billot made his fortune himself.' That is what I wish people to say. It was not therefore I who read the letter; it was the quartermaster of the gendarmerie, whom I happened to meet."

"And what did this letter tell you, father? He is always well satisfied with us, is he not?"

"Judge for yourself."

And the farmer drew from his pocket a letter, which he handed to his daughter. Catherine read as follows:—

"MY DEAR MONSIEUR BILLOT,— I arrived from America, where I found a people richer, greater, and happier than the people of our country. This arises from their being free, which we are not. But we are also advanced towards a new era. Every one should labour to hasten the day when the light shall shine. I know your principles, Monsieur Billot. I know your influence over your brother farmers, and over the whole of that worthy population of workmen and labourers whom you order, not as a king, but as a father. Inculcate in them principles of self-devotedness and fraternity, which I have observed that you possess. Philosophy is universal: all men ought to read their duties by the light of its torch. I send you a small book, in which all these duties and all these rights are set forth. This little book was written by me, although my name does not appear upon the title page. Propagate the principles it contains, which are those of universal equality. Let it be read aloud in the long winter evenings. Reading is the pasture of the mind, as bread is the food of the body.

"One of these days I shall go to see you, and propose to you a new system of farm-letting, which is much in use in America. It consists in dividing the produce of the land between the farmer and landlord. This appears to me more in conformity with the laws of primitive society, and, above all, more in accordance with the goodness of God. Health and fraternity!

"HONORE GILBERT,
Citizen of Philadelphia."

"Oh! oh!" cried Pitou, "this is a well-written letter."

"Is it not?" said Billot, delighted.

"Yes, my dear father," observed Catherine; "but I doubt whether the quartermaster of the gendarmerie is of your opinion."

"And why do you think so?"

"Because it appears to me that this letter may not only

bring the doctor into trouble, but you also, my dear father."

"Pshaw!" said Billot, "you are always afraid; but that matters not. Here is the pamphlet; and here is employment ready found for you, Pitou. In the evenings you shall read it."

"And in the daytime?"

"In the daytime you will take care of the sheep and cows. In the mean time, there is your pamphlet."

And the farmer took from one of his holsters one of those small pamphlets with a red cover, of which so great a number were published in those days, either with or without permission of the authorities. Only, in the latter case, the author ran the risk of being sent to the galleys.

"Read me the title of that book, Pitou, that I may always speak of the title until I shall be able to speak of the work itself. You shall read the remainder to me another time."

Pitou read on the first page these words, which habit has since rendered very vague and very insignificant, but which at that period struck to the very fibres of all hearts:—

"Of the Independence of Man, and the Liberty of Nations."

"What do you say to that, Pitou?" inquired the farmer.

"I say, that it appears to me, Monsieur Billot, that independence and liberty are the same thing. My protector would be turned out of Monsieur Fortier's class, for being guilty of a pleonasm."

"Pleonasm or not," cried the farmer, "that book is the book of a man."

"That matters not, father," said Catherine, with woman's admirable instinct. "Hide it, I entreat you! It will bring you into trouble. As to myself, I know that I am trembling even at the sight of it."

"And why would you have it injure me, since it has not injured its author?"

"And how can you tell that, father? It is eight days

since that letter was written; and it could not have taken eight days for the parcel to have come from Havre. I also have received a letter this morning."

"And from whom?"

"From Sebastian Gilbert, who has written to make inquiries. He desires me, even, to remember him to his foster brother, Pitou. I had forgotten to deliver his message."

"Well!"

"Well, he says that his father had been expected to arrive in Paris, and that he had not arrived."

"Mademoiselle is right," said Pitou. "It seems to me that this non-arrival is disquieting."

"Hold your tongue, you timid fellow, and read the doctor's treatise," said the farmer; "then you will become not only learned, but a man."

It was thus people spoke in those days; for they were at the preface of that great Grecian and Roman history which the French nation imitated, during ten years, in all its phases, devotedness, proscriptions, victories, and slavery.

Pitou put the book under his arm with so solemn a gesture, that he completely gained the farmer's heart.

"And now," said Billot, "have you dined?"

"No, monsieur," replied Pitou, maintaining the same religious, semi-heroic attitude he had assumed since the book had been intrusted to his care.

"He was just going to get his dinner, when he was driven out of doors," said the young girl.

"Well, then," said Billot, "go in and ask my wife for the usual farm fare, and to-morrow you shall enter on your functions."

Pitou, with an eloquent look, thanked Monsieur Billot, and, led by Catherine, entered the farm kitchen, — a domain placed under the absolute direction of Madame Billot.

CHAPTER VI.

PASTORAL SCENES.

MADAME BILLOT was a stout, buxom mamma, between thirty-five and thirty-six years old, round as a ball, fresh-coloured, smooth-skinned, and cordial in her manners. She trotted continually from the fowl-house to the dove-cote, from the sheep-pens to the cow-stable; she inspected the simmering of her soup, the stoves on which her fricassees and ragouts were cooking, and the spit on which the joint was roasting, as does a general when surveying his cantonments, judging by a mere glance whether everything was in its right place, and by their very odour whether the thyme and laurel leaves were distributed in due proportions in the stewpans. She scolded from habit, but without the slightest intention that her scolding should be disagreeable; and her husband, whom she honoured as she would the greatest potentate of the earth, did not escape. Her daughter, also, got her share, though she loved her more than Madame de Sévigné loved Madame de Grignan; and neither were her work-people overlooked, though she fed them better than any farmer in a circuit of ten leagues fed his. Therefore was it that when a vacancy occurred in her household there was great competition to obtain the place. But, as in heaven, unfortunately there were many applicants, and comparatively but few chosen.

We have seen that Pitou, without having been an applicant, had been elected. This was a happiness that he appreciated at its just value, especially when he saw the gold-coloured manchette which was placed at his left hand, the pot of cider which was on his right, and the piece of

pickled pork on a plate before him. Since the moment that he lost his poor mother, and that was about five years since, Pitou had not, even on great festival days, partaken of such fare.

Therefore Pitou, full of gratitude, felt, as by degrees he bolted the bread which he devoured, and as he washed down the pork with large draughts of the cider, — therefore Pitou felt a vast augmentation of respect for the farmer, of admiration for his wife, and of love for his daughter. There was only one thing which disquieted him, and that was the humiliating function he would have to fulfil during the day, of driving out the sheep and cows, — a function so little in harmony with that which awaited him each evening, and the object of which was to instruct humanity in the most elevated principles of sociality and humanity.

It was on this subject that Pitou was meditating immediately after his dinner. But even in this reverie, the influence of that excellent dinner was sensibly manifested. He began to consider things in a very different point of view from that which he had taken of them when fasting. The functions of a shepherd and a cow-driver, which he considered as so far beneath him, had been fulfilled by gods and demigods.

Apollo, in a situation very similar to his own — that is to say, driven from Olympus by Jupiter, as he, Pitou, had been driven from Pleux by his aunt — had become a shepherd, and tended the flocks of Admetus. It is true that Admetus was a shepherd-king; but then Apollo was a god!

Hercules had been a cow-keeper, or something very like it; since — as we are told by mythology — he seized the cows of Geryon by the tail; for whether a man leads a cow by the tail or by the head depends entirely on the difference of custom of those who take care of them, and that is all; and this would not in any way change the fact itself that he was a cow-leader, that is to say, a cow-keeper.

And, moreover, Tityrus reclining at the foot of an elm tree, of whom Virgil speaks, and who congratulates himself in such beautiful verses on the repose which Augustus has granted to him, he also was a shepherd.

And, finally, Melibœus was a shepherd, who so poetically bewails his having left his domestic hearth.

Certainly, all these persons spoke Latin well enough to have been abbés, and yet they preferred seeing their goats browse on the bitter cytissus to saying mass or to chanting vespers. Therefore, taking everything into consideration, the calling of a shepherd had its charms. Moreover, what was to prevent Pitou from restoring to it the poetry and the dignity it had lost? Who could prevent Pitou from proposing trials of skill in singing to the Menalcas and the Palemons of the neighbouring villages? No one, undoubtedly. Pitou had more than once sung in the choir; and but for his having once been caught drinking the wine out of the Abbé Fortier's cruet, who, with his usual rigour, had on the instant dismissed the singing boy, this talent might have become transcendent. He could not play upon the pipe, 't is true; but he could imitate the note of every bird, which is very nearly the same thing. He could not make himself a lute with pipes of unequal thickness, as did the lover of *Syrinx*; but from the linden tree or the chestnut he could cut whistles whose perfection had more than once produced the enthusiastic applause of his companions. Pitou, therefore, could become a shepherd without great derogation of his dignity. He did not lower himself to this profession, so ill appreciated in modern days; he elevated the profession to his own standard.

Besides which, the sheepfolds were placed under the special direction of Mademoiselle Billot; and receiving orders from her lips was not receiving orders.

But, on her part, Catherine watched over the dignity of Pitou.

The same evening, when the young man approached her, and asked her at what hour he ought to go out to rejoin the shepherds, she said, smiling, —

"You will not go out at all."

"And why so?" said Pitou with astonishment.

"I have made my father comprehend that the education you have received places you above the functions which he had allotted to you. You will remain at the farm."

"Ah! so much the better," said Pitou. "In this way I shall not leave you."

The exclamation had escaped the ingenuous Pitou. But he had no sooner uttered it, than he blushed to his very ears; while Catherine, on her part, held down her head and smiled.

"Ah! forgive me, mademoiselle; it came from my heart in spite of me. You must not be angry with me on that account," said Pitou.

"Neither am I angry with you, Monsieur Pitou," said Catherine; "and it is no fault of yours if you feel pleasure in remaining with me."

There was a silence of some moments. This was not at all astonishing, the poor children had said so much to each other in so few words.

"But," said Pitou, "I cannot remain at the farm doing nothing. What am I to do at the farm?"

"You will do what I used to do; you will keep the books, the accounts with the work-people, and of our receipts and expenses. You know how to reckon, do you not?"

"I know my four rules," proudly replied Pitou.

"That is one more than ever I knew," said Catherine. "I never was able to get farther than the third. You see, therefore, that my father will be a gainer by having you for his accountant; and as I also shall gain, and you yourself will gain by it, everybody will be a gainer."

"And in what way will you gain by it, mademoiselle?" inquired Pitou.

"I shall gain time by it; and in that time I will make myself caps, that I may look prettier."

"Ah!" cried Pitou, "I think you quite pretty enough without caps."

"That is possible; but it is only your own individual taste," said the young girl, laughing. "Moreover, I cannot go and dance on a Sunday at Villers-Cotterêts without having some sort of a cap upon my head. That is all very well for your great ladies, who have the right of wearing powder and going bareheaded."

"I think your hair more beautiful as it is, than if it were powdered," said Pitou.

"Come, come, now; I see you are bent on paying me compliments."

"No, mademoiselle, I do not know how to make them. We did not learn that at the Abbé Fortier's."

"And did you learn to dance there?"

"To dance?" inquired Pitou, greatly astonished.

"Yes, — to dance?"

"To dance, and at the Abbé Fortier's? Good Lord, mademoiselle! Oh! learn to dance, indeed!"

"Then you do not know how to dance?"

"No," said Pitou.

"Well, then, you shall go with me to the ball on Sunday, and you will look at Monsieur de Charny, while he is dancing. He is the best dancer of all the young men in the neighbourhood."

"And who is this Monsieur de Charny?" demanded Pitou.

"He is the proprietor of the Château de Boursonne."

"And he will dance on Sunday?"

"Undoubtedly."

"And with whom?"

"With me."

Pitou's heart sank within him, without his being able to ascertain a reason for it.

"Then," said he, "it is in order to dance with him that you wish to dress yourself so finely."

"To dance with him — with others — with everybody."

"Excepting with me."

"And why not with you?"

"Because I do not know how to dance."

"You will learn."

"Ah! if you would but teach me, — you, Mademoiselle Catherine, — I should learn much better than by seeing Monsieur de Charny, I can assure you."

"We shall see that," said Catherine. "In the mean time it is nine o'clock, and we must go to bed. Good night, Pitou."

"Good night, Mademoiselle Catherine."

There was something both agreeable and disagreeable in what Mademoiselle Catherine had said to Pitou. The agreeable was, that he had been promoted from the rank of a cow-keeper and shepherd to that of book-keeper; the disagreeable was, that he did not know how to dance, and that Monsieur de Charny did know. According to what Catherine had said, he was the best dancer in the whole neighbourhood.

Pitou was dreaming all night that he saw Monsieur de Charny dancing, and that he danced very badly.

The next day Pitou entered upon his new office, under the direction of Catherine. Then one thing struck him, and it was that under some masters study is altogether delightful. In the space of about two hours he completely understood the duties he had to perform.

"Ah, mademoiselle!" exclaimed he, "if you had but taught me Latin, instead of that Abbé Fortier, I believe I never should have committed any barbarisms."

"And you would have become an abbé?"

"And I should have been an abbé," replied Pitou.

"So, then, you would have shut yourself up in a seminary in which no woman would have entered."

"Well, now," cried Pitou, "I really had never thought of that, Mademoiselle Catherine. I would much rather, then, not be an abbé."

The good man Billot returned home at nine o'clock; he had gone out before Pitou was up. Every morning the farmer rose at three o'clock, to see to the sending out of

his horses and his wagoners. Then he went over his fields until nine o'clock, to see that every one was at his post, and that all his labourers were doing their duty. At nine o'clock he returned to the house to breakfast, and went out again at ten. One o'clock was the dinner hour; and the afternoon was, like the morning, spent in looking after the workmen. Thus the affairs of worthy Billot were prospering marvellously. As he had said, he possessed sixty acres in the sunshine, and a thousand louis in the shade; and it was even probable that, had the calculation been correctly made, — had Pitou made up the account, and had not been too much agitated by the presence or remembrance of Mademoiselle Catherine, — some few acres of land and some few hundred louis more would have been found than the worthy farmer had himself admitted.

At breakfast, Billot informed Pitou that the first reading of Doctor Gilbert's new book was to take place in the barn, two days after, at ten in the morning.

Pitou then timidly observed that ten o'clock was the hour for attending mass. But the farmer said that he had specially selected that hour to try his workmen.

We have already said that Father Billot was a philosopher.

He detested the priests, whom he considered as the apostles of tyranny, and, finding an opportunity for raising an altar against an altar, he eagerly took advantage of it.

Madame Billot and Catherine ventured to offer some observations. The farmer replied that the women might, if they chose, go to mass, seeing that religion had been made expressly for women; but, as to the men, they should attend the reading of the doctor's work, or they should leave his service.

Billot, the philosopher, was very despotic in his own house; Catherine alone had the privilege of raising her voice against his decrees. But if these decrees were so tenaciously determined upon that he knitted his brows when replying to her, Catherine became as silent as the rest.

Catherine, however, thought of taking advantage of the circumstance to benefit Pitou. On rising from table, she observed to her father that, in order to read all the magnificent phrases he would have to read on the Sunday morning, Pitou was but miserably clad; that he was about to play the part of a master, since he was to instruct others; and that the master ought not to be placed in a position to blush in the presence of his disciples.

Billot authorised his daughter to make an arrangement with Monsieur Dulauroy, the tailor at Villers-Cotterêts, for a new suit of clothes for Pitou.

Catherine was right; for new garments were not merely a matter of taste with regard to Pitou. The breeches which he wore were the same which Doctor Gilbert had, five years before, ordered for him. At that time they were too long, but since then had become much too short. We are compelled to acknowledge, however, that, through the care of Mademoiselle Angelique, they had been elongated at least two inches every year. As to the coat and waistcoat, they had both disappeared for upwards of two years, and had been replaced by the serge gown in which our hero first presented himself to the observation of our readers.

Pitou had never paid any attention to his toilet. A looking-glass was an unknown piece of furniture in the abode of Mademoiselle Angelique; and not having, like the handsome Narcissus, any violent tendency to fall in love with himself, Pitou had never thought of looking at himself in the transparent rivulets near which he set his bird snares.

But from the moment that Mademoiselle Catherine had spoken to him of accompanying her to the ball; from the moment the name of the elegant cavalier, Monsieur de Charny, had been mentioned; since the conversation about caps, on which the young girl calculated to increase her attractions, — Pitou had looked at himself in a mirror; and, being rendered melancholy by the very dilapidated condition of his garments, had asked himself in what way he also could make any addition to his natural advantages.

Unfortunately, Pitou was not able to find any solution to this question. The dilapidation of his clothes was positive. Now in order to have new clothes made, it was necessary to have ready cash; and during the whole course of his existence Pitou had never possessed a single penny.

Pitou had undoubtedly read that, when shepherds were contending for the prize in music or in poetry, they decorated themselves with roses. But he thought, and with great reason, that, although such a wreath might well assort with his expressive features, it would only place in stronger relief the miserable state of his habiliments.

Pitou was therefore most agreeably surprised when, on the Sunday morning at eight o'clock, and at the moment he was racking his brains for some means of embellishing his person, Monsieur Dulauroy entered his room and placed upon a chair a coat and breeches of sky-blue cloth, and a large white waistcoat with red stripes.

At the same instant a sempstress came in, and laid upon another chair, opposite to the above mentioned one, a new shirt and a cravat. If the shirt fitted well, she had orders to complete the half-dozen.

It was a moment teeming with surprise. Behind the sempstress appeared the hat-maker; he had brought with him a small cocked hat, of the very latest fashion and of most elegant shape, and which had been fabricated by Monsieur Cornu, the first hat-maker in Villers-Cotterêts.

A shoemaker had also been ordered to bring shoes for Pitou; and he had with him a pair with handsome silver buckles made expressly for him.

Pitou could not recover his amazement; he could not in any way comprehend that all these riches were for him. In his most exaggerated dreams, he could not even have dared to wish for so sumptuous a wardrobe. Tears of gratitude gushed from his eyelids, and he could only murmur out these words:—

“Oh Mademoiselle Catherine! Mademoiselle Catherine! never will I forget what you have done for me.”

Everything fitted remarkably well, and as if Pitou had been actually measured for them, with the sole exception of the shoes, which were too small by half. Monsieur Lauderau, the shoemaker, had taken measure by his son's foot, who was four years Pitou's senior.

This superiority over young Lauderau gave a momentary feeling of pride to our hero; but this feeling of pride was soon checked by the reflection that he would either be obliged to go to the dance in his old shoes, or in no shoes at all, which would not be in accordance with the remainder of his costume. But this uneasiness was not of long duration. A pair of shoes which had been sent home at the same time to Farmer Billot fitted him exactly. It fortunately happened that Billot's feet and Pitou's were of the same dimensions, which was carefully concealed from Billot, for fear that so alarming a fact might annoy him.

While Pitou was busied in arraying himself in these sumptuous habiliments, the hairdresser came in and divided Pitou's hair into three compartments. One, and the most voluminous, was destined to fall over the collar of his coat, in the form of a tail; the two others were destined to ornament the temples, by the strange and unpoetical name of dog's ears,—ridiculous enough, but that was the name given to them in those days.

And now there is one thing we must acknowledge — and that is, that when Pitou, thus combed and frizzled, dressed in his sky-blue coat and breeches, with his rose-striped waistcoat and his frilled shirt, with his tail and his dog's-ear curls, looked at himself in the glass, he found great difficulty in recognising himself, and twisted himself about to see whether Adonis in person had not redescended on the earth.

He was alone; he smiled graciously at himself; and with head erect, his thumbs thrust into his waistcoat pockets, he said, raising himself upon his toes, —

“We shall see this Monsieur de Charny!”

It is true that Ange Pitou in his new costume resembled,

as one pea does another, not one of Virgil's shepherds, but one of those so admirably painted by Watteau.

Consequently, the first step which Pitou made on entering the farm kitchen was a perfect triumph.

"Oh mamma! only see," cried Catherine, "how well Pitou looks now."

"The fact is, that one would hardly know him again," replied Madame Billot.

Unfortunately, after the first general survey which had so much struck the young girl, she entered into a more minute examination of the details, and Pitou was less good looking in the detailed than in the general view.

"Oh! how singular!" cried Catherine; "what great hands you have!"

"Yes," said Pitou proudly, "I have famous hands, have I not?"

"And what thick knees!"

"That is a proof that I shall grow taller."

"Why, it appears to me that you are tall enough already, Monsieur Pitou," observed Catherine.

"That does not matter, I shall grow taller still," said Pitou. "I am only seventeen and a half years old."

"And no calves!"

"Ah! yes, that is true, — none at all; but they will grow soon."

"That is to be hoped," said Catherine, "but no matter, you are very well as you are."

Pitou made a bow.

"Oh! oh!" exclaimed Billot, coming in at that moment, and also struck with Pitou's appearance. "How fine you are, my lad. How I wish your Aunt Angelique could see you now."

"And so do I," said Pitou.

"I wonder what she would say?"

"She would not say a word; she would be in a perfect fury."

"But, father," said Catherine, with a certain degree of

uneasiness, "would she not have the right to take him back again?"

"Why, she turned him out of doors."

"And besides which," said Pitou, "the five years have gone by."

"What five years?" inquired Catherine.

"The five years for which Doctor Gilbert left a thousand livres."

"He had then left a thousand livres with your aunt?"

"Yes, yes, yes; to get me into a good apprenticeship."

"That is a man!" exclaimed the farmer. "When one thinks that I hear something of the same kind related of him every day. Therefore to him," he added, stretching out his hands with a gesture of admiration, "will I be devoted in life and death."

"He wished that I should learn some trade," said Pitou.

"And he was right. And this is the way in which good intentions are thwarted. A man leaves a thousand francs that a child may be taught a trade, and instead of having him taught a trade, he is placed under the tuition of a bigoted priest! And how much did she pay to your Abbé Fortier?"

"Who?"

"Your aunt."

"She never paid him anything."

"What? Did she pocket the two hundred livres a year which that good Monsieur Gilbert paid?"

"Probably."

"Listen to me, for I have a bit of advice to give you, Pitou; whenever your bigoted old aunt shall walk off, take care to examine minutely every cupboard, every mattress, every pickle-jar —"

"And for what?" asked Pitou.

"Because, do you see, you will find some hidden treasure, some good old louis, in some old stocking-foot. Why! it must undoubtedly be so, for she could never have found a purse large enough to contain all her savings."

"Do you think so?"

"Most assuredly. But we will speak of this at a more proper time and place. To-day we must take a little walk. Have you Doctor Gilbert's book?"

"I have it here in my pocket."

"Father," said Catherine, "have you well reflected upon this?"

"There is no need for reflection," replied the farmer, "when one is about to do a good thing, my child. The doctor told me to have the book read, and to propagate the principles which it contains; the book shall therefore be read, and the principles shall be propagated."

"And," said Catherine, timidly, "may my mother and I, then, go to attend mass?"

"Go to mass, my child; go with your mother," replied Billot. "You are women; we who are men have other things to think of. Come, Pitou, we must be off, for we are waited for."

Pitou bowed majestically to Madame Billot and Mademoiselle Catherine; then with head erect he followed the worthy farmer, proud of having been thus for the first time called a man.

CHAPTER VII.

IN WHICH IT IS DEMONSTRATED THAT, ALTHOUGH LONG LEGS MAY BE SOMEWHAT UNGRACEFUL IN DANCING, THEY ARE VERY USEFUL IN RUNNING.

THERE was a numerous assemblage in the barn. Billot, as we have said, was much respected by his labourers, inasmuch as, though he scolded them unscrupulously, he fed and paid them well.

Consequently, every one of them had hastened eagerly to accept his invitation.

Moreover, at this period the people had been seized with that extraordinary fever which pervades nations when nations are about to set themselves to work to produce some great change. Strange new words, which until then had scarcely ever been uttered, issued from mouths which had never before pronounced them. They were the words, Liberty, Independence, Emancipation,—and, strange to say, it was not only among the people that these words were heard; no, these words had been pronounced in the first place by the nobility, and the voice which responded to them was but an echo.

It was in the west that had first shone forth this light, which was destined to illuminate until it seared. It was in America that arose this sun, which, in accomplishing its course, was to make France one vast and burning mass, by the light of which the affrighted nations were to read the word Republic traced in vivid characters of blood.

But notwithstanding this, meetings in which political affairs were discussed were less frequent than might have been imagined. Men who had sprung up no one knew

from where, apostles of an invisible and almost unknown deity, had traversed towns and country villages, strewing in their road words in praise of liberty. The government, blinded heretofore, began at length to open its eyes. Those who were at the head of the immense machine denominated the public chariot felt that some of its wheels were paralysed, without being able to comprehend whence the obstacle proceeded. The opposition existed in all minds, if it had not yet instilled itself into all hands and arms; invisible, though present, though sensible, though threatening, and still more threatening from being like ghosts untangible, and from being divined, although it could not be clutched.

Twenty or twenty-five husbandmen, all in the employment of Billot, had assembled in the barn.

Billot entered it, followed by Pitou. All heads were instantly uncovered, and they waved their hats to welcome their loved master. It was plainly visible that all these men were ready to meet death, should he but give the signal.

The farmer explained to the country people that the pamphlet which Pitou was about to read to them was the work of Doctor Gilbert. The doctor was well known throughout the whole district, in which he was the proprietor of several farms, the one rented by Billot being the most considerable.

A cask had been prepared for the reader. Pitou ascended this extempore form, and at once began.

It is to be remarked that people of the lower class, and I might almost venture to say men in general, listen with most attention to that which they understand the least. It was evident that the general sense of the pamphlet escaped the perceptions of the most enlightened among this rustic auditory, and even of Billot himself. But in the midst of that obscure phraseology, from time to time, flashed, like lightnings in a dark sky charged with electricity, the luminous words of Independence, Liberty, Equality. Nothing more was necessary; shouts of applause burst forth; cries

of "Long live Doctor Gilbert!" resounded on every side. Not more than one third of the pamphlet had been read; it was decided that the remainder should be delivered on the two following Sundays.

The auditors were therefore invited for the next Sunday, and every one of them promised to attend.

Pitou had well performed his part; he had read energetically and well. Nothing succeeds so well as success. The reader had taken his share of the plaudits which had been addressed to the work, and, submitting to the influence of this relative science, Billot himself felt growing within him a certain degree of consideration for the pupil of the Abbé Fortier. Pitou, already a giant in his physical proportions, had morally grown ten inches in the opinion of Billot.

But there was one thing wanting to Pitou's happiness, — Mademoiselle Catherine had not been present at his triumph.

But Father Billot, enchanted with the effect produced by the doctor's pamphlet, hastened to communicate its success to his wife and daughter. Madame Billot made no reply; she was a short-sighted woman.

Mademoiselle Catherine smiled sorrowfully.

"Well, what is the matter with you now?" said the farmer.

"Father! my dear father!" cried Catherine, "I fear that you are running into danger."

"There, now; are you going to play the bird of ill omen? You are well aware that I like the lark better than the owl."

"Father, I have already been told to warn you that eyes are watching you."

"And who was it that told you this, if you please?"

"A friend."

"A friend? All advice is deserving of thanks. You must tell me the name of this friend. Who is he? Come, now, let us hear."

"A man who ought to be well informed on such matters."

"But who is it?"

"Monsieur Isidor de Charny."

"What business has that fop to meddle in such matters? Does he pretend to give me advice upon my way of thinking? Do I give him advice upon his mode of dressing? It appears to me that as much might be said on one subject as the other."

"My dear father, I do not tell you this to vex you. The advice he gave me was well intended."

"Well, then, in return I will give him my counsel, and which you can on my behalf transmit to him."

"And what is that?"

"It is that he and his fellows take good care what they are about. They shake these noble gentlemen about very nicely in the National Assembly; and more than once a great deal has been said of court favourites, male and female. Let him forewarn his brother, Monsieur Olivier de Charny, who is out yonder, to look to himself, for it is said he is not on bad terms with the Austrian woman."

"Father," said Catherine, "you have more experience than we have; act according to your pleasure."

"Yes, indeed," murmured Pitou, whose success had given him great confidence; "what business has your Monsieur Isidor to make and meddle?"

Catherine either did not hear him, or pretended not to hear him, and there the conversation dropped.

The dinner was got through as usual. Never did dinner appear so long to Pitou; he was feverishly anxious to show himself abroad with Mademoiselle Catherine leaning on his arm.

This Sunday was a monstrously great day to him, and he promised himself that the date, the 12th of July, should ever remain engraved upon his memory.

They left the farm at last at about three o'clock. Catherine was positively charming. She was a pretty fair-haired girl, with black eyes, slight and flexible as the

willows that shaded the small spring from which the farm was supplied with water; she was, moreover, dressed with that natural coquetry which enhances the advantages of every woman, and her pretty little fantastic cap, made with her own hands, as she had told Pitou, became her admirably.

The ball did not in general commence till six o'clock. Four village minstrels, mounted upon a small stage formed of planks, did the honours of this ballroom in the open air, on receiving a contribution of six shillings for every country dance.

While waiting for the opening of the dance, the company walked in the celebrated Lane of Sighs, of which Aunt Angelique had spoken, to see the young gentlemen of the town and the neighbourhood play at tennis, under the direction of Master Farollet, tennis-master-in-chief to his Highness the Duke of Orleans. Master Farollet was considered a perfect oracle, and his decision in matters of *chase* and *passe*, and service, was as irrevocable as were the laws of the Medes and Persians.

Pitou, without knowing why, would have very much desired to remain in the Lane of Sighs, but it was not for the purpose of remaining concealed beneath the shade of this double row of beech trees that Catherine had attired herself in the becoming dress which had so much astonished Pitou.

Women are like the flowers which chance hath brought forth in the shade, — their tendency is always towards the light, — and one way or the other they must expand their fresh and perfumed petals in the sunshine, though it withers and destroys them.

The violet alone, as is asserted by the poets, has the modesty to remain concealed; but then she is arrayed in mourning, as if deploring her useless, because unnoticed, charms.

Catherine, therefore, dragged away at Pitou's arm, and so successfully, that they took the path to the tennis court.

We must, however, hasten to acknowledge that Pitou did not go very unwillingly. He also was as anxious to display his sky-blue suit and his cocked hat as Catherine was to show her Galatea cap and her shining short silk bodice.

One thing above all flattered our hero, and gave him a momentary advantage over Catherine. As no one recognised him, Pitou never having been seen in such sumptuous habiliments, they took him for some young stranger arrived in the town, some nephew or cousin of the Billot family; some even asserted that he was Catherine's intended. But Pitou felt too great an interest in proving his own identity to allow the error to be of long continuance.

He gave so many nods to his friends, he so frequently took off his hat to his acquaintance, that at last the unworthy pupil of the Abbé Fortier was recognised in the spruce young countryman.

A sort of buzzing murmur quickly ran through the throng, and many of his former companions exclaimed, "Why, really, it is Pitou!" "Only look at Pitou!" "Did you see Ange Pitou?"

This clamour at length reached the ears of Mademoiselle Angelique; but as this clamour informed her that the good-looking youth pointed out by it was her nephew, walking with his toes turned out and his elbows gracefully curved, the old maid, who had always seen Pitou walk with his toes turned in and his elbows stuck to his ribs, shook her head incredulously, and merely said, —

"You are mistaken; that is not my pitiful nephew."

The two young people reached the tennis court. On that day there happened to be a match between the players of Soissons and those of Villers-Cotterêts, so that the game was very animated. Catherine and Pitou placed themselves close to the rope stretched to prevent the crowd from interfering with the players; it was Catherine who had selected this place as being the best.

In about a minute the voice of Master Farollet was heard, calling out, "Two in, — go over."

The players effectually changed places; that is to say, that they each went to defend their quarters and attack those of their adversaries. One of the players, on passing by, bowed to Catherine with a smile; Catherine replied by a courtesy, and blushed. At the same moment Pitou felt a nervous trembling shoot through Catherine's arm, which was leaning on his.

An unknown anguish shot through Pitou's heart.

"That is Monsieur de Charny," said he, looking at his companion.

"Yes," replied Catherine. "Ah! you know him, then?"

"I do not know him," replied Pitou, "but I guessed that it was he."

And in fact Pitou had readily conceived this young man to be Monsieur de Charny from what Catherine had said to him the previous evening.

The person who had bowed to the young girl was an elegant gentleman, who might be twenty-three or twenty-four years of age; he was handsome, of good stature, well formed, and graceful in his movements, as are all those who have had an aristocratic education from their very cradle. All those manly exercises in which perfection can only be attained but on the condition of their being studied from childhood, Monsieur Isidor de Charny executed with remarkable perfection; besides which he was one of those whose costume always harmonised with the pursuit he was engaged in. His hunting dresses were quoted for their perfect taste; his attire in the fencing-room might have served as a pattern to Saint-Georges himself; and his riding coats were, or rather appeared to be, thanks to his manner of wearing them, of a particularly elegant shape.

On the day we are speaking of, Monsieur de Charny, a younger brother of our old acquaintance, the Count de Charny, was attired in tight-fitting pantaloons of a light colour, which set off to great advantage the shape of his finely formed and muscular limbs; his hair was negligently dressed as for the morning; elegant tennis sandals for the

moment were substituted for the red-heeled shoe or the top-boots; his waistcoat was of white marsella, fitting as closely to his waist as if he had worn stays; and to sum up all, his servant was waiting upon the slope with a green coat embroidered with gold lace for his master to put on when the match was ended.

The animation of the game communicated to his features all the charm and freshness of youth, notwithstanding his twenty-three years, the nightly excesses he had committed, and the gambling parties he had attended, which frequently the rising sun had illumined with its rays; all this had made sad havoc with his constitution.

None of these personal advantages, which doubtless the young girl had remarked, had escaped the jealous eyes of Pitou. On observing the small hands and feet of Monsieur de Charny, he began to feel less proud of that prodigality of nature which had given him the victory over the shoemaker's son, and he reflected that nature might have distributed in a more skilful manner over every part of his frame the elements of which it was composed.

In fact, with what there was too much in the hands, the feet, and the knees of Pitou, nature might have furnished him with a handsome, well-formed leg. Only, things were not in their right place; where there required a certain elegance of proportion, there was an unnatural thickness; where a certain sleekness and rotundity would have been advantageous, there was an utter void.

Pitou looked at his legs with the same expression as the stag did of whom we have read in the fable.

"What is the matter with you, Monsieur Pitou?" said Catherine, who had observed his discontented looks.

Pitou did not reply; he could not have explained his feelings; he therefore only sighed.

The game had terminated. The Viscount de Charny took advantage of the interval between the game just finished and the one about to commence, to come over to speak to Catherine. As he approached them nearer and

nearer, Pitou observed the colour heightening in the young girl's cheeks, and felt her arm become more and more trembling.

The viscount gave a nod to Pitou, and then, with that familiar politeness which the nobility of that period knew how to adopt with the citizens' daughters and grisettes, he inquired of Catherine as to the state of her health, and asked her to be his partner in the first dance. Catherine accepted. A smile conveyed the thanks of the young nobleman. The game was about to begin, and he was called for; he bowed to Catherine, and then left her with the same elegant ease with which he had approached her.

Pitou felt all the superiority which the man possessed over him, who could speak, smile, approach, and take leave in such a manner.

A month's study, employed in endeavouring to imitate the simple though elegant movements of Monsieur de Charny, would only have produced a ridiculous parody, and this Pitou himself acknowledged.

If Pitou had been capable of entertaining a feeling of hatred, he would from that moment have detested the Viscount de Charny.

Catherine remained looking at the tennis players until the moment when they called their servants to bring their coats to them. She then directed her steps towards the place set apart for dancing, to Pitou's great despair, who on that day appeared to be destined to go everywhere but where he wished.

Monsieur de Charny did not allow Catherine to wait long for him. A slight change in his dress had converted him from a tennis player into an elegant dancer.

The violins gave the signal, and he at once presented his hand to Catherine, reminding her of the promise she had made to dance with him.

That which Pitou experienced when he felt Catherine withdrawing her arm from within his, and saw the young girl blushing deeply as she advanced with her cavalier into

the circle, was one of the most disagreeable sensations of his whole life. A cold perspiration stood upon his brow; a cloud passed over his eyes; he stretched out his hand and caught hold of the balustrade for support, for he felt that his knees, strongly constituted as they were, were giving way.

As to Catherine, she did not appear to have, and very probably even had not, any idea of what was passing in poor Pitou's heart. She was at once happy and proud; happy at being about to dance, and proud of dancing with the handsomest cavalier of the whole neighbourhood.

If Pitou had been constrained to admire Monsieur de Charny as a tennis player, he was compelled to do him justice as a dancer. In those days the fashion had not yet sprung up of walking instead of dancing. Dancing was an art which formed a necessary part of the education of every one. Without citing the case of Monsieur de Lauzun, who had owed his fortune to the manner in which he had danced his first steps in the king's quadrille, more than one nobleman owed the favour he had enjoyed at court to the manner in which he had extended his legs or pointed the extremity of his toe. In this respect the viscount was a model of grace and perfection, and he might, like Louis XIV., have danced in a theatre with the chance of being applauded, although he was neither a king nor an actor.

For the second time Pitou looked at his own legs, and was obliged to acknowledge that, unless some great metamorphosis should take place in that portion of his individuality, he must altogether renounce any attempt to succeed in vying with Monsieur de Charny in the particular art which he was displaying at that moment.

The country dance having ended — for Catherine it had scarcely lasted a few seconds, but to Pitou it had appeared a century — she returned to resume the arm of her cavalier, and could not avoid observing the change which had taken place in his countenance. He was pale; the perspiration

was streaming from his forehead, and a tear, half dried up by jealousy, was standing in his humid eye.

"Ah, good Heaven!" she exclaimed, "what is the matter with you, Pitou?"

"The matter is," replied the poor youth, "that I shall never dare to dance with you, after having seen you dance with Monsieur de Charny."

"Pshaw!" said Catherine, "you must not allow yourself to be cast down in this way; you will dance as well as you are able, and I shall not feel the less pleasure in dancing with you."

"Ah!" cried Pitou, "you say that, mademoiselle, to console me; but I know myself, and I feel assured that you will always feel more pleasure in dancing with this young nobleman than with me."

Catherine made no reply, for she would not utter a falsehood, only, as she was an excellent creature, and had begun to perceive that something extraordinary was passing in the heart of the poor youth, she treated him very kindly; but this kindness could not restore to him his lost joy and peace of mind. Father Billot had spoken truly: Pitou was beginning to be a man, — he was suffering.

Catherine danced five or six country dances after this, one of which was with Monsieur de Charny. This time, without suffering less in reality than before, Pitou was, in appearance, much more calm. He followed each movement which Catherine and her cavalier made with eager eyes; he endeavoured from the motion of their lips to divine what they were saying to each other, and when, during the figures of the dance, their hands were joined, he tried to discern whether their hands merely touched or pressed each other when thus they came in contact.

Doubtless it was the second dance with De Charny that Catherine had been awaiting, for it was scarcely ended when the young girl proposed to Pitou to return to the farm. Never was proposal acceded to with more alacrity; but the blow was struck, and Pitou, while taking long

strides, which Catherine from time to time was obliged to restrain, remained perfectly silent.

"What is the matter with you?" at length said Catherine to him, "and why is it that you do not speak to me?"

"I do not speak to you, mademoiselle," said Pitou, "because I do not know how to speak as Monsieur de Charny does. What would you have me say to you, after all the fine things which he whispered to you while dancing with you?"

"Only see how unjust you are, Monsieur Ange; why, we were speaking of you."

"Of me, mademoiselle, and how so?"

"Why, Monsieur Pitou, if your protector should not return, you must have another found to supply his place."

"I am then no longer capable of keeping the farm accounts?" inquired Pitou, with a sigh.

"On the contrary, Monsieur Ange, it is the farm accounts which are no longer worthy of being kept by you. With the education that you have received, you can find some more fitting occupation."

"I do not know what I may be fit for; but this I know, that I will not accept anything better, if I am to obtain it through the Viscount de Charny."

"And why should you refuse his protection? His brother the Count de Charny is, it would appear, in high favour at court, and has married an intimate friend of the queen. He told me that, if it would be agreeable to me, he could obtain for you a place in the custom-house."

"Much obliged, mademoiselle; but I have already told you that I am well satisfied to remain as I am, and unless, indeed, your father wishes to send me away, I will remain at the farm."

"And why in the devil's name should I send you away?" cried a gruff voice, which Catherine tremblingly recognised to be that of her father.

"My dear Pitou," said Catherine, in a whisper, "do not say a word of Monsieur Isidor, I beg of you."

"Well! why don't you answer?"

"Why, really I don't know," said Pitou, much confused; "perhaps you do not think me sufficiently well informed to be useful to you?"

"Not sufficiently well informed, when you calculate as well as Barême, and when you read well enough to teach our schoolmaster, who notwithstanding thinks himself a great scholar. No, Pitou, it is God who brings to my house the people who enter it, and when once they are in it they shall remain there as long as God pleases."

Pitou returned to the farm on this assurance; but although this was something, it was not enough. A great change had been operated in his mind between the time of his going out and returning; he had lost a thing which, once lost, is never recovered; this was confidence in himself, and therefore Pitou, contrary to his usual custom, slept very badly. In his waking moments he recalled to mind Doctor Gilbert's book; this book was written principally against the nobility, against the abuses committed by the privileged classes, against the cowardice of those who submitted to them; it appeared to Pitou that he only then began to comprehend all the fine things which he had read that morning, and he promised himself, as soon as it should be daylight, to read for his own satisfaction, and to himself, the masterpiece which he had read aloud and to everybody.

But as Pitou had slept badly, he awoke late; he did not, however, the less determine on carrying into effect his project of reading the book. It was seven o'clock; the farmer would not return until nine; besides, were he to return earlier, he could not but approve an occupation which he had himself recommended.

He descended by a small staircase, and seated himself on a low bench which happened to be under Catherine's window. Was it accident that had led Pitou to seat himself precisely in that spot, or did he know the relative positions of that window and that bench?

Be that as it may, Pitou was attired in his old, everyday clothes, which there had not yet been time to get replaced, and which were composed of his black breeches, his green cassock, and his rusty-looking shoes. He drew the pamphlet from his pocket and began to read.

We would not venture to say that, on beginning to read, the eyes of Pitou were not, from time to time, turned from his book to the window; but as the window did not exhibit the fair face of the young girl in its framework of nasturtiums and convolvuli, Pitou's eyes at length fixed themselves intently on his book.

It is true that as his hand neglected to turn over the leaves, and that the more fixed his attention appeared to be, the less did his hand move, it might be believed that his mind was fixed upon some other object, and that he was meditating instead of reading.

Suddenly it appeared to Pitou that a shade was thrown over the pages of the pamphlet, until then illuminated by the morning sun. This shadow, too dense to be that of a cloud, could therefore only be produced by some opaque body. Now there are opaque bodies which are so delightful to look upon, that Pitou quickly turned round to ascertain what it was that thus intercepted his sunshine.

Pitou's hopes were, however, delusive. There was in fact an opaque body which robbed him of the daylight and heat which Diogenes desired Alexander not to deprive him of. But this opaque body, instead of being delightful, presented to his view a sufficiently disagreeable appearance.

It was that of a man about forty-five years old, who was taller and thinner than Pitou himself, dressed in a coat almost as threadbare as his own, and who was leaning his head over his shoulder, and appeared to be reading the pamphlet with a curiosity equal to Pitou's absence of mind.

Pitou was very much astonished; a gracious smile was playing round the lips of the dark-looking gentleman,

exhibiting a mouth which had only retained four teeth, two in the upper and two in the lower jaw, crossing and sharpening themselves against each other, like the tusks of the wild boar.

"An American edition," said the man, with a strong nasal twang; "an octavo, 'On the Liberty of Man and the Independence of Nations, Boston, 1788.'"

While this man was reading, Pitou opened his eyes with progressively increasing astonishment, so that when the black man ceased speaking, Pitou's eyes had attained the greatest possible development of which they were capable.

"Boston, 1788. That is right, monsieur," replied Pitou.

"It is the treatise of Doctor Gilbert," said the gentleman in black.

"Yes, monsieur," politely replied Pitou, rising from his seat, for he had been told that it was uncivil to remain sitting when speaking to a superior; and in the still ingenuous mind of Pitou this man had the right to claim superiority over him.

But on getting up, Pitou observed something of a rosy colour moving towards the window, and which gave him a significant glance. This rosy something was Mademoiselle Catherine. The young girl looked at him with an extraordinary expression, and made strange signs to him.

"Monsieur, if it is not being indiscreet," said the gentleman in black, who, having his back turned towards the window, was altogether ignorant of what was passing. "may I ask to whom this book belongs?"

And he pointed with his finger to the pamphlet which Pitou held in his hand.

Pitou was about to say that the book belonged to Monsieur Billot, when he heard the following words uttered in an almost supplicating tone, —

"Say that it is your own."

The gentleman in black, who was at that moment all eyes, did not hear these words.

"Monsieur," replied Pitou, majestically, "this book belongs to me."

The gentleman in black raised his head, for he began to remark that the amazed looks of Pitou were from time to time diverted from him to fix themselves on one particular spot. He saw the window, but Catherine had divined the movement of the gentleman in black, and, rapid as a bird, she had disappeared.

"What are you looking at up yonder?" inquired the gentleman in black.

"Well, now," replied Pitou, smiling, "permit me to observe to you that you are very inquisitive, — *curiosus*, or rather *avidus cognoscendi*, as the Abbé Fortier, my preceptor, used to say."

"You say, then," rejoined the interrogator, without appearing in the slightest degree intimidated by the proof of learning which Pitou had just given, with the intention of affording the gentleman in black a higher idea of his acquirements than he had before entertained, — "you say, then, that this book is yours?"

Pitou gave his eyes a furtive glance, so that the window came within the scope of his visual organs. Catherine's head again appeared at it, and made him an affirmative sign.

"Yes, monsieur," replied Pitou. "You are, perhaps, anxious to read it, — *Avidus legendi libri*, or *legendæ historiæ*."

"Monsieur," said the gentleman in black, "you appear to be much above the position which your attire would indicate. *Non dives vestitu sed ingenio*. Consequently, I arrest you."

"How! you arrest me?" cried Pitou, completely astounded.

"Yes, monsieur; follow me, I beg of you."

Pitou no longer looked up in the air, but around him, and perceived two police sergeants, who were awaiting the orders of the gentleman in black. The two sergeants seemed to him to have sprung up from beneath the ground.

"Let us draw up our report, gentlemen," said the gentleman in black.

The sergeants tied Pitou's hands together with a rope, and between his hands remained Doctor Gilbert's book.

Then they fastened Pitou himself to a ring which was in the wall under the window.

Pitou was about to exclaim against this treatment, but he heard the voice which had so much influence over him saying, "Let them do what they please."

Pitou therefore allowed them to do as they pleased, with a docility which perfectly enchanted the sergeants, and above all the gentleman in black. So that without the slightest mistrust they entered the farm-house, the two sergeants to fetch a table, the gentleman in black to — but this we shall learn by and by.

The sergeants and the gentleman in black had scarcely entered the house when the soft voice was again heard.

"Hold up your hands," said the voice.

Pitou not only held up his hands but his head, and he perceived the pale and terrified face of Catherine; she had a knife in her hand.

"Higher! higher!" said she.

Pitou raised himself on tiptoe.

Catherine leaned out of the window, the knife touched the rope, and Pitou recovered the liberty of his hands.

"Take the knife," said Catherine, "and in your turn cut the rope which fastens you to the ring."

It was not necessary to repeat this twice to Pitou. He cut the cord, and was then completely free.

"And now," said Catherine, "here is a double-louis. You have good legs; make your escape. Go to Paris and acquaint the doctor —"

She could not complete the sentence. The two sergeants reappeared, and the double-louis fell at Pitou's feet.

Pitou quickly snatched it up. The sergeants were on the threshold of the door, where they remained for a moment or two, astonished at seeing the man at liberty whom so short a time before they had so securely tied up. On seeing them, Pitou's hair stood on an end, and

he confusedly remembered the *in crinibus angues* of the Eumenides.

The two sergeants and Pitou remained for a short time in the position of two pointer dogs and a hare, — motionless, and looking at each other. But as at the slightest movement of the dogs the hare springs off, at the first movement of the sergeants Pitou gave a prodigious bound, and leaped over a high hedge.

The sergeants uttered a cry which made the exempt rush out of the house, who had a small casket under his arm. The exempt did not lose any time in parleying, but instantly ran after Pitou; the two sergeants imitated his example; but they were not active enough to jump, as he had done, over a hedge four feet and a half in height. They were therefore compelled to go round to a gate.

But when they reached the corner of the hedge, they perceived Pitou five hundred yards off in the plain, and hastening towards the forest, from which he was distant scarcely a quarter of a league, and which he would doubtless reach in some six or seven minutes.

At that moment Pitou turned round; and on perceiving the sergeants, who were pursuing him rather from a desire to perform their duty than with the hope of catching him, he redoubled his speed, and soon disappeared in the skirts of the wood.

Pitou ran on at this rate for another quarter of an hour. He could have run two hours had it been necessary, for he had the wind of a stag, as well as its velocity.

But at the end of a quarter of an hour he felt instinctively that he must be out of danger. He stopped, drew breath, and listened; and having assured himself that he had completely distanced his pursuers, he said to himself, —

“It is incredible that so many events can have been crowded into three days,” and he looked alternately at his double-louis and his knife.

“Oh!” said he, “I wish I had only time to change my double-louis, and give two sous to Mademoiselle Catherine;

for I am much afraid that this knife will cut our friendship. No matter," added he, "since she has desired me to go to Paris, let us go there."

And Pitou, having looked about him to ascertain what part of the country he had reached, and finding that he was between Boursonne and Yvors, took a narrow path which would lead him straight to Gondreville, which path was crossed by the road which led direct to Paris.

CHAPTER VIII.

SHOWING WHY THE GENTLEMAN IN BLACK HAD GONE INTO
THE FARM AT THE SAME TIME WITH THE TWO SERGEANTS.

BUT now let us return to the farm, and relate the catastrophe of which Pitou's episode was the winding up.

At about six o'clock in the morning, an agent of the Paris police, accompanied by two sergeants, arrived at Villers-Cotterêts, had presented themselves to the commissary of police, and had requested that the residence of Farmer Billot might be pointed out to them.

When they came within about five hundred yards of the farm, the exempt perceived a labourer working in a field. He went to him and asked him whether he should find Monsieur Billot at home. The labourer replied that Monsieur Billot never returned home till nine o'clock, — that is to say, before the breakfast hour. But at that very moment, as chance would have it, the labourer raised his eyes, and pointed to a man on horseback who was talking with a shepherd at the distance of a quarter of a league from the farm.

"And yonder," said he, "is the person you are inquiring for."

"Monsieur Billot?"

"Yes."

"That horseman?"

"Yes, that is Monsieur Billot."

"Well, then, my friend," rejoined the exempt, "do you wish to afford great pleasure to your master?"

"I should like it vastly."

"Go and tell him that a gentleman from Paris is waiting for him at the farm."

"Oh!" cried the labourer, "can it be Dr. Gilbert?"

"Tell him what I say, — that is all."

The countryman did not wait to have the order repeated, but ran as hard as he could across the fields, while the police officer and the two sergeants went and concealed themselves behind a half-ruined wall which stood facing the gate of the farmyard.

In a very few minutes the galloping of a horse was heard. It was Billot, who had hastened back.

He went into the farmyard, jumped from his horse, threw the bridle to one of the stable boys, and rushed into the kitchen, being convinced that the first person he should see there would be Doctor Gilbert standing beneath the immense mantelpiece; but he only saw Madame Billot seated in the middle of the room, plucking the feathers from a duck with all the minute care which this difficult operation demands.

Catherine was in her own room, employed in making a cap for the following Sunday. As it appears, Catherine was determined to be prepared in good time; but if the women have one pleasure greater than that of being well dressed, it is that of preparing the articles with which they are to adorn themselves.

Billot paused on the threshold of the kitchen, and looked around inquiringly.

"Who, then, was it sent for me?" said he.

"It was I," replied a flute-like voice behind him.

Billot turned round, and perceived the gentleman in black and the two sergeants.

"Heyday!" cried he, retreating three paces from them, "and what do you want with me?"

"Oh, good Heavens! almost nothing, my dear Monsieur Billot," said the man with the flute-like voice; "only to make a perquisition in your farm, that is all."

"A perquisition?" exclaimed the astonished Billot.

"A perquisition," repeated the exempt.

Billot cast a glance at his fowling-piece, which was hanging over the chimney.

"Since we have a National Assembly," said he, "I thought that citizens were no longer exposed to such vexations, which belong to another age, and which appertain to a bygone state of things. What do you want with me? I am a peaceable and loyal man."

The agents of every police in the world have one habit which is common to them all, — that of replying to the questions of their victims only while they are searching their pockets. While they are arresting them, or tying their hands behind, some appear to be moved by pity. These tender-hearted ones are the most dangerous, inasmuch as they appear to be the most kind-hearted.

The one who was exercising his functions in the house of Farmer Billot was of the true Tapin and Desgrés school, made up of sweets, having always a tear for those whom they are persecuting, but who nevertheless do not use their hands to wipe their eyes.

The one in question, although heaving a deep sigh, made a sign with his hand to the two sergeants, who approached Billot. The worthy farmer sprang forward, and stretched out his hand to seize his gun, but it was diverted from the weapon, — a doubly dangerous act at such a moment, as it might not only have killed the person about to use it, but the one against whom it was to be pointed. His hand was seized and imprisoned between two little hands, rendered strong by terror and powerful by supplication.

It was Catherine, who had run down stairs on hearing the noise, and had arrived in time to save her father from committing the crime of rebelling against the constituted authorities.

The first moment of anger having passed by, Billot no longer offered any resistance. The exempt ordered that he should be confined in a room on the ground floor, and Catherine in a room on the first story. As to Madame

Billot, she was considered so inoffensive that no attention was paid to her, and she was allowed to remain in the kitchen. After this, finding himself master of the place, the exempt began to search the secretary, wardrobes, and chests of drawers.

Billot, on finding himself alone, wished to make his escape. But, like most of the rooms on the ground floor of the farmhouse, the windows of the one he was imprisoned in were secured by iron bars. The gentleman in black had with a glance observed these bars, while Billot, who had had them placed there, had forgotten them.

Then, peeping through the keyhole, he perceived the exempt and his two acolytes, who were ransacking everything throughout the house.

"Hilloa!" cried he; "what is the meaning of all this?" "What are you doing there?"

"You can very plainly see that, my dear Monsieur Billot," said the exempt. "We are seeking for something which we have not yet found."

"But perhaps you are banditti, villains, regular thieves. Who knows?"

"Oh, monsieur!" replied the exempt through the door, "you do us wrong. We are honest people, as you are; only that we are in the pay of his Majesty, and consequently compelled to obey his orders."

"His Majesty's orders!" exclaimed Billot. "The king, Louis XVI., has ordered you to search my secretary, to turn everything topsy-turvy in my closets and my wardrobes?"

"Yes."

"His Majesty," rejoined Billot, "who last year, when there was such a frightful famine that we were thinking of eating our horses, — his Majesty, who two years ago, when the hail-storm of the 13th July destroyed our whole harvest, and did not then deign to feel any anxiety about us, — what has he now to do with my farm, which he never saw, or with me, whom he does not know?"

"You will pardon me, monsieur," said the exempt, opening the door a little, but with great precaution, and exhibiting his order, signed by the lieutenant of police, and which, according to the usual mode, was headed with these words, "In the king's name." "His Majesty has heard you spoken of, although he may not be personally acquainted with you; therefore do not refuse the honour which he does you, and receive in a fitting manner those who present themselves to you in his name."

And the exempt, with a polite bow and a friendly wink of the eye, closed the door again; after which the examination was resumed.

Billot said not a word more, but crossed his arms, and paced up and down the room, like a lion in a cage. He felt that he was caught, and in the power of this man.

The investigation was silently continued. These men appeared to have dropped from the clouds; no one had seen them but the labourer who had been sent to fetch Billot. The dogs even in the yards had not barked on their approach. Assuredly the chief of this expedition must have been considered a skilful man, even by his own fraternity. It was evidently not his first enterprise of this nature.

Billot heard the moanings of his daughter, shut up in the room above his own, and he remembered her prophetic words; for there could not be a doubt that the persecution the farmer had been subjected to had for its cause the doctor's book.

At length the clock struck nine; and Billot through his grated window could count his labourers, as they returned to the farmhouse to get their breakfast. On seeing this, he reflected that, in case of any conflict, might, if not right, was on his side. This conviction made the blood boil in his veins; he had no longer the fortitude to restrain his feelings, and, seizing the door with both hands, he shook it so violently that with two or three efforts of the same nature he would have burst off the lock.

The police agents immediately opened the door, and they saw the farmer standing close by it, with threatening looks. All was confusion in the house.

"But, finally," cried Billot, "what is it you are seeking for in my house? Tell me, or, zounds! I will make you tell me!"

The successive return of the labourers had not escaped the experienced eye of such a man as the exempt; he had counted the farm servants, and had admitted to himself that in case of any combat he would not be able to retain possession of the field of battle. He therefore approached Billot with a demeanour more honeyed even than before, and, bowing almost to the ground, said, —

"I will tell you what it is, dear Monsieur Billot, although it is against our custom. What we are seeking for in your house is a subversive book, an incendiary pamphlet, placed under ban by our royal censors."

"A book!—and in the house of a farmer who cannot read?"

"What is there astonishing in that, if you are a friend to the author, and he has sent it to you?"

"I am not the friend of Doctor Gilbert; I am merely his humble servant. The friend of the doctor indeed!—that would be too great an honour for a poor farmer like me."

This inconsiderate outbreak, in which Billot betrayed himself by acknowledging that he not only knew the author, which was natural enough, he being his landlord, but that he knew the book, insured the agent's victory. The latter drew himself up, assumed his most amiable air, and, touching Billot's arm, said, with a smile which appeared to distend transversely over one half of his face:—

"'T is thou hast named him.' Do you know that verse, my dear Monsieur Billot?"

"I know no verses."

"It is by Racine, a very great poet."

"Well, what is the meaning of that line?" cried Billot.

"It means that you have betrayed yourself."

"Who, — I?"

"Yourself."

"And how so?"

"By being the first to mention Monsieur Gilbert, whom we had the discretion not to name."

"That is true," said Billot.

"You acknowledge it, then?"

"I will do more than that."

"My dear Monsieur Billot, you overwhelm us with kindness: what is it you will do?"

"If it is that book you are hunting after, and I tell you where that book is," rejoined the farmer, with an uneasiness which he could not altogether control, "you will leave off turning everything topsy-turvy here, will you not?"

The exempt made a sign to his two assistants.

"Most assuredly," replied the exempt, "since it is that book which is the object of our perquisition. Only," continued he, with his smiling grimace, "you may perhaps acknowledge one copy of it when you may have ten in your possession."

"I have only one, and that I swear to you."

"But it is this we are obliged to ascertain by a most careful search, dear Monsieur Billot," rejoined the exempt. "Have patience, therefore; in five minutes it will be concluded. We are only poor sergeants obeying the orders of the authorities, and you would not surely prevent men of honour — there are men of honour in every station of life, dear Monsieur Billot — you would not throw any impediment in the way of men of honour, when they are doing their duty."

The gentleman in black had adopted the right mode; this was the proper course for persuading Billot.

"Well, do it then," replied the farmer, "but do it quickly."

And he turned his back upon them.

The exempt then very gently closed the door, and more

gently still turned the key in the lock, at which Billot shrugged his shoulders in disdain, being certain of pulling open the door whenever he might please.

On his side the gentleman in black made a sign to the sergeants, who resumed their investigation, and they set to work much more actively than before. Books, papers, linen, were all opened, examined, unfolded.

Suddenly, at the bottom of a wardrobe which had been completely emptied, they perceived a small oaken casket bound with iron. The exempt darted upon it as a vulture on his prey. At the mere sight, the scent, the handling of this object, he undoubtedly at once recognised that which he was in search of, for he quickly concealed the casket beneath his threadbare coat, and made a sign to the two sergeants that his mission was effected.

Billot was again becoming impatient; he stopped before the locked door.

"Why, I tell you again, that you will not find it unless I tell you where it is," he cried; "it is not worth the while to tumble and destroy all my things for nothing. I am not a conspirator. In the devil's name, listen to me! Do you not hear what I am saying? Answer me, or I will set off for Paris, and will complain to the king, to the National Assembly, to everybody."

In those days the king was always mentioned before the people.

"Yes, my dear Monsieur Billot, we hear you, and we are quite ready to do justice to your excellent reasoning. Come, now, tell us where is this book? And as we are now convinced that you have only that single copy, we will take it, and then we will withdraw, and all will be over."

"Well," replied Billot, "the book is in the possession of an honest lad, to whom I have given it with the charge of carrying it to a friend."

"And what is the name of this honest lad?" asked the gentleman in black, in an insinuating tone.

"Ange Pitou. He is a poor orphan whom I have taken

into my house from charity, and who does not even know the subject of this book."

"Thanks, dear Monsieur Billot," said the exempt.

They threw the linen back again into the wardrobe, and locked it up again, but the casket was not there.

"And where is this amiable youth to be found?"

"I think I saw him as I returned, somewhere near the bed of scarlet runners, close to the tunnel. Go, take the book from him; but take care not to do him any injury."

"Injury! Oh, my dear Monsieur Billot, how little you know us! We would not harm even a fly."

And he went towards the indicated spot. When he got near the scarlet runners he perceived Pitou, whose tall stature made him appear more formidable than he was in reality. Thinking that the two sergeants would stand in need of his assistance to master the young giant, the exempt had taken off his cloak, had rolled the casket in it, and had hid the whole in a secret corner, but where he could easily regain possession of it.

But Catherine, who had been listening with her ear glued, as it were, to the door, had vaguely heard the words, "Book," "Doctor," and "Pitou." Therefore, finding the storm she had predicted had burst upon them, she had formed the idea of attenuating its effects. It was then that she prompted Pitou to say that he was the owner of the book.

We have related what then passed regarding it, — how Pitou, bound and handcuffed by the exempt and his acolytes, had been restored to liberty by Catherine, who had taken advantage of the moment when the two sergeants went into the house to fetch a table to write upon, and the gentleman in black to take his cloak and casket.

We have stated how Pitou made his escape by jumping over a hedge, but that which we did not state is that, like a man of talent, the exempt had taken advantage of this flight.

And, in fact, the twofold mission intrusted to the exempt

having been accomplished, the flight of Pitou afforded an excellent opportunity to the exempt and his two men to make their escape also.

The gentleman in black, although he knew he had not the slightest chance of catching the fugitive, excited the two sergeants by his vociferations and his example to such a degree that, on seeing them racing through the clover, the wheat, and the Spanish trefoil fields, one would have imagined that they were the most inveterate enemies of Pitou, whose long legs they were most cordially blessing in their hearts.

But Pitou had scarcely gained the covert of the wood, or had even passed the skirts of it, when the confederates halted behind a bush. During their race they had been joined by two other sergeants, who had kept themselves concealed in the neighbourhood of the farm, and who had been instructed not to show themselves unless summoned by their chief.

"Upon my word," said the exempt, "it is very well that our gallant young fellow had not the casket instead of the book, for we should have been obliged to hire post-horses to catch him. By Jupiter! those legs of his are not men's legs, but those of a stag."

"Yes," replied one of the sergeants; "but he has not got it, has he, Monsieur Wolfsfoot? for, on the contrary, 't is you who have it."

"Undoubtedly, my friend, and here it is," replied the exempt, whose name we have now given for the first time, or we should rather say the nickname which had been given to him on account of the lightness of his step and the stealthiness of his walk.

"Then we are entitled to the reward which was promised us," observed one of the sergeants.

"Here it is," said the exempt, taking from his pocket four golden louis, which he divided among his four sergeants, without any distinction as to those who had been actively engaged in the perquisition or those who had merely remained concealed.

"Long live the lieutenant of police!" cried the sergeants.

"There is no harm in crying 'Long live the lieutenant!'" said Wolfsfoot; "but every time you utter such exclamations you should do it with discernment. It is not the lieutenant who pays."

"Who is it, then?"

"Some gentleman or lady friend of his, I know not which, but who desires that his or her name may not be mentioned in the business."

"I would wager that it is the person who wishes for the casket," said one of the sergeants.

"Hear now, Rigold, my friend," said the gentleman in black; "I have always affirmed that you are a lad replete with perspicacity, but until the day when this perspicacity shall produce its fruits by being amply recompensed, I advise you to be silent. What we have now to do is to make the best of our way on foot out of this neighbourhood. That damned farmer has not the appearance of being conciliatory, and as soon as he discovers that the casket is missing he will despatch all his farm labourers in pursuit of us, and they are fellows who can aim a gun as truly as any of his Majesty's Swiss guards."

This opinion was doubtless that of the majority of the party, for they all five set off at once, and, continuing to remain within the border of the forest, which concealed them from all eyes, they rapidly pursued their way, until, after walking three quarters of a league, they came out upon the public road.

This precaution was not a useless one, for Catherine had scarcely seen the gentleman in black and his two attendants disappear in pursuit of Pitou, than, full of confidence in him whom they pursued, who, unless some accident happened to him, would lead them a long dance, she called the husbandmen, who were well aware that something strange was going on, although they were ignorant of the positive facts, to tell them to open her door for her.

The labourers instantly obeyed her, and Catherine, again free, hastened to set her father at liberty.

Billot appeared to be in a dream. Instead of at once rushing out of the room, he seemed to walk mistrustfully, and returned from the door into the middle of the apartment. It might have been imagined that he did not dare to remain in the same spot, and yet that he was afraid of casting his eyes upon the articles of furniture which had been broken open and emptied by the sergeants.

"But," cried he, on seeing his daughter, "tell me, did they take the book from him?"

"I believe so, father," she replied; "but they did not take him."

"Whom do you mean?"

"Pitou; he has escaped from them, and they are still running after him. They must already have got to Cayolles or Vauciennes."

"So much the better! Poor fellow! it is I who have brought this upon him."

"Oh, father, do not feel uneasy about him, but think only of what we have to do. Pitou, you may rest assured, will get out of this scrape. But what disorder! good Heaven! only look, mother!"

"Oh, my linen wardrobe!" cried Madame Billot; "they have not even respected my linen wardrobe! What villains they must be!"

"They have searched the wardrobe where the linen was kept!" exclaimed Billot.

And he rushed towards the wardrobe, which the exempt, as we have before stated, had carefully closed again, and plunged his hands into piles of towels and table napkins, all confusedly huddled together.

"Oh," cried he, "it cannot be possible!"

"What are you looking for, father?" inquired Catherine. Billot gazed around him as if completely bewildered.

"Search,—search if you can see it anywhere! But no; not in that chest of drawers; not in that secretary. Besides, it was there, there; it was I myself who put it there. I saw it there only yesterday. It was not the

book they were seeking for, the wretches, but the casket!"

"What casket?" asked Catherine.

"Why, you know well enough."

"What! Doctor Gilbert's casket?" inquired Madame Billot, who always, in matters of transcendent importance, allowed others to speak and act.

"Yes, Doctor Gilbert's casket!" cried Billot, plunging his fingers into his thick hair; "that casket which was so precious to him."

"You terrify me, my dear father," said Catherine.

"Unfortunate man that I am!" cried Billot, with furious anger; "and I, who had not in the slightest imagined such a thing! I, who did not even for a moment think of that casket! Oh, what will the doctor say? What will he think of me? That I am a traitor, a coward, a miserable wretch!"

"But, good Heaven! what did this casket contain, father?"

"I do not know; but this I know, that I had engaged, even at the hazard of my life, to keep it safe; and I ought to have allowed myself to be killed in order to defend it."

And Billot made a gesture of such despair, that his wife and daughter started back with terror.

"Oh God! oh God! are you losing your reason, my poor father?" said Catherine.

And she burst into tears.

"Answer me, then!" she cried; "for the love of Heaven, answer me!"

"Pierre, my friend," said Madame Billot, "answer your daughter, — answer your wife."

"My horse! my horse!" cried the farmer; "bring out my horse!"

"Where are you going, father?"

"To let the doctor know. The doctor must be informed of this."

"But where will you find him?"

"At Paris. Did you not read in the letter he wrote to us, that he was going to Paris? He must be there by this time. I will go to Paris. My horse! my horse!"

"And you will leave us thus, my dear father? You will leave us in such a moment as this? You will leave us full of anxiety and anguish?"

"It must be so, my child; it must be so," said the farmer, taking his daughter's face between his hands, and convulsively fixing his lips upon it. "'If ever you should lose this casket,' said the doctor to me, 'or rather should it ever be surreptitiously taken from you, the instant you discover the robbery, set off at once, Billot, and inform me of it, wherever I may be. Let nothing stop you, not even the life of a man.'"

"Good Lord! what can this casket contain?"

"Of that I know nothing; all that I know is, that it was placed under my care, and that I have allowed it to be taken from me. Ah, here is my horse! From the son, who is at college, I shall learn where to find the father."

And kissing his wife and daughter for the last time, the farmer jumped into his saddle, and galloped across the country, in the direction of the high road to Paris.

CHAPTER IX.

THE ROAD TO PARIS.

LET us return to Pitou.

Pitou was urged onwards by the two most powerful stimulants known in this great world, — Fear and Love.

Fear whispered to him in direct terms, —

“You may be either arrested or beaten: take care of yourself, Pitou!”

And that sufficed to make him run as swiftly as a roebuck.

Love had said to him, in the voice of Catherine, —

“Escape quickly, my dear Pitou!”

And Pitou had escaped.

These two stimulants combined, as we have said, had such an effect upon him that Pitou did not merely run; Pitou absolutely flew.

How useful did Pitou’s long legs, which appeared to be knotted to him, and his enormous knees, which looked so ungainly in a ball-room, prove to him in the open country, when his heart, enlarged with terror, beat three pulsations in a second.

Monsieur de Charny, with his small feet, his elegantly formed knees, and his symmetrically shaped calves, could not have run at such a rate as that.

Pitou recalled to his mind that pretty fable, in which a stag is represented weeping over his slim shanks, reflected in a fountain; and although he did not bear on his forehead the ornament which the quadruped deemed some compensation for his slender legs, he reproached himself for having so much despised his *stilts*.

For such was the appellation which Madame Billot gave to Pitou's legs, when Pitou looked at them standing before a looking-glass.

Pitou, therefore, continued making his way through the wood, leaving Cayolles on his right, and Yvors on his left, turning round at every corner of a bush to see, or rather to listen, for it was long since he had seen anything of his persecutors, who had been distanced at the outset by the brilliant proof of swiftness Pitou had given, in placing a space of at least a thousand yards between them and himself, — a distance which he was increasing every moment.

Why was Atalanta married? Pitou would have entered the lists with her; and to have excelled Hippomenes he would not assuredly have needed to employ, as he did, the subterfuge of the three golden apples.

It is true, as we have already said, that Monsieur Wolfsfoot's agents, delighted at having possession of their booty, cared not a fig as to what became of Pitou; but Pitou knew not this.

Ceasing to be pursued by the reality, he continued to be pursued by the shadows.

As to the black-clothed gentlemen, they had that confidence in themselves which renders human beings lazy.

"Run! run!" cried they, thrusting their hands into their pockets, and making the reward which Monsieur Wolfsfoot had given them jingle in them; "run! good fellow, run! we can always find you again should we want you."

Which, we may say in passing, far from being a vain boast, was the precise truth.

And Pitou continued to run as if he had heard the *aside* of Monsieur Wolfsfoot's agents.

When he had, by scientifically altering his course, and turning and twisting as do the wild denizens of the forest, to throw the hounds off scent, when he had doubled and turned so as to form such a maze that Nimrod himself would not have been able to unravel it, he at once made up his mind as to his route, and, taking a sharp turn to

the right, went in a direct line to the high road which leads from Villers-Cotterêts to Paris, near the heath of Gondreville.

Having formed this resolution, he bounded through the thicket, and after running for little more than a quarter of an hour he perceived the road, enclosed by its yellow sand, and bordered with its green trees.

An hour after his departure from the farm he was on the king's highway.

He had run about four leagues and a half during that hour, as much as any rider could expect from an active horse going at a good round trot.

He cast a glance behind him: there was nothing on the road.

He cast a glance before him: there were two women upon asses.

Pitou had got hold of a small work on mythology, with engravings, belonging to young Gilbert; mythology was much studied in those days.

The history of the gods and goddesses of the Grecian Olympus formed part of the education of young persons. By dint of looking at the engravings, Pitou had become acquainted with mythology; he had seen Jupiter metamorphose himself into a bull to carry off Europa; into a swan, that he might approach and make love to the daughter of King Tyndarus. He had, in short, seen other gods transforming themselves into forms more or less picturesque; but that one of his Majesty's police officers had transformed himself into an ass had never come within the scope of his erudition. King Midas himself had never had anything of the animal but the ears; and he was a king; he made gold at will; he had therefore money enough to purchase the whole skin of the quadruped.

Somewhat reassured by what he saw, or rather by what he did not see, Pitou threw himself down on the grassy bank of the roadside, wiped with his sleeve his broad, red face, and, thus luxuriously reclining, he yielded himself up to the voluptuousness of perspiring in tranquillity.

But the sweet emanations from the clover and marjoram could not make Pitou forget the pickled pork made by Madame Billot, and the quarter of a six-pound loaf which Catherine allotted to him at every meal, — that is to say, three times a day.

This bread — which at that time cost four sous and a half a pound, a most exorbitant price, equivalent at least to nine sous in our days — this bread, which was so scarce throughout France, and which, when it was eatable, passed for the fabulous *brioche*,¹ which the Duchess of Polignac advised the Parisians to feed upon when flour should altogether fail them.

Pitou therefore said to himself, philosophically, that Mademoiselle Catherine was the most generous princess in the world, and that Father Billot's farm was the most sumptuous palace in the universe.

Then, as the Israelites on the banks of the Jordan, he turned a dying eye towards the east, — that is to say, in the direction of that thrice happy farm, and sighed heavily.

But sighing is not so disagreeable an operation to a man who stands in need of taking breath after a violent race.

Pitou breathed more freely when sighing, and he felt his ideas, which for a time had been much confused and agitated, return to him gradually with his breath.

"Why is it," reasoned he with himself, "that so many extraordinary events have happened to me in so short a space of time? Why should I have met with more accidents within the last three days than during the whole course of my previous life?"

"It is because I dreamt of a cat that wanted to fly at me," continued Pitou.

And he made a gesture signifying that the source of all his misfortunes had been thus already pointed out to him.

¹ A sort of dry cake made of flour, eggs, and saffron, which the Parisians eat with their coffee and milk. — TRANSLATOR.

"Yes," added he, after a moment's reflection, "but this is not the logic of my venerable friend, the Abbé Fortier. It is not because I dreamt of an irritated cat that all these adventures have happened to me. Dreams are only given to a man as a sort of warning, and this is why an author said, 'Thou hast been dreaming, beware! *Cave somniasti!*'"

"*Somniasti*," said Pitou, doubtingly, and with somewhat of alarm, "am I then again committing a barbarism? Oh, no! I am only making an elision; it was *somniavisti* which I should have said, in grammatical language.

"It is astonishing," cried Pitou, considering himself admiringly, "how well I understand Latin since I no longer study it."

And after this glorification of himself, Pitou resumed his journey.

Pitou walked on very quickly, though he was much tranquillised. His pace was somewhere about two leagues an hour.

The result of this was that, two hours after he had recommenced his walk, Pitou had got beyond Nanteuil, and was getting on towards Dammartin.

Suddenly the ears of Pitou, as acute as those of an Osage Indian, were struck with the distant sound of a horse's feet upon the paved road.

"Oh!" cried Pitou, scanning the celebrated verse of Virgil, —

"*'Quadrupedante putrem sonitu quatit ungula campum.'*"

And he looked behind him.

But he saw nothing.

Could it be the asses which he had passed at Levignan, and which had now come on at a gallop? No; for the iron hoof, as the poet calls it, rang upon the paved road, and Pitou, whether at Haramont or at Villers-Cotterêts, had never known an ass excepting that of Mother Sabot that

was shod, and even this was because Mother Sabot performed the duty of letter-carrier between Villers-Cotterêts and Crespy.

He therefore momentarily forgot the noise he had heard, to return to his reflections.

Who could these men in black be who had questioned him about Doctor Gilbert, who had tied his hands, who had pursued him, and whom he had at length so completely distanced?

Where could these men have sprung from, for they were altogether unknown in the district?

What could they have in particular to do with Pitou, — he who had never seen them, and who consequently did not know them?

How then was it, as he did not know them, that they had known him? Why had Mademoiselle Catherine told him to set off for Paris? and why, in order to facilitate his journey, had she given him a louis of forty-eight francs, — that is to say, two hundred and forty pounds of bread, at four sous a pound? Why, it was enough to supply him with food for eighty days, or three months, if he would stint his rations somewhat.

Could Mademoiselle Catherine suppose that Pitou was to remain eighty days absent from the farm?

Pitou suddenly started.

"Oh! oh!" he exclaimed, "again that horse's hoofs.

"This time," said Pitou, "I am not mistaken; the noise I hear is positively that of a horse galloping. I shall see it when he gets to the top of yon hill."

Pitou had scarcely spoken when a horse appeared at the top of a hill he had just left behind him, — that is to say, at the distance of about four hundred yards from the spot on which he stood.

Pitou, who would not allow that a police agent could have transmogrified himself into an ass, admitted at once that he might have got on horseback to regain the prey that had escaped him.

Terror, from which he had been for some time relieved, again seized on Pitou, and immediately his legs became even longer and more intrepid than when he had made such marvellous good use of them some two hours previously.

Therefore, without reflecting, without looking behind, without even endeavouring to conceal his flight, calculating on the excellence of his steel-like sinews, Pitou, with a tremendous leap, sprang across the ditch which ran by the roadside, and began a rapid course in the direction of Ermenonville. Pitou did not know anything of Ermenonville, he only saw upon the horizon the summits of some tall trees, and he said to himself, —

“If I reach those trees, which are undoubtedly on the border of some forest, I am saved.”

And he ran toward Ermenonville.

On this occasion, he had to outvie a horse in running. Pitou had no longer legs, but wings.

And his rapidity was increased after having run some hundred yards, for Pitou had cast a glance behind him, and had seen the horseman oblige his horse to take the same immense leap which he had taken over the ditch on the roadside.

From that moment there could be no longer a doubt in the mind of the fugitive that the horseman was in reality in pursuit of him, and consequently the fugitive had increased his speed, never again turning his head for fear of losing time. What most urged him on at that moment was not the clattering on the paved road, — that noise was deadened by the clover and the fallow fields; what most urged him on was a sort of cry which pursued him, the last syllable of his name pronounced by the horseman, — a sort of “hou! hou!” which appeared to be uttered angrily, and which reached him on the wings of the wind, which he was endeavouring to outstrip.

But after having maintained this sharp race during ten minutes, Pitou began to feel that his chest became oppressed. The blood rushed to his head, his eyes began to wander.

It seemed to him that his knees became more and more developed; that his loins were filling with small pebbles. From time to time he stumbled over the furrows, — he who usually raised his feet so high when running that every nail in the soles of his shoes were visible.

At last the horse, created superior to man in the art of running, gained on the biped Pitou, who at the same time heard the voice of the horseman, who no longer cried, "hou! hou!" but clearly and distinctly, "Pitou! Pitou!"

All was over, — all was lost.

However, Pitou endeavoured to continue the race; it had become a sort of mechanical movement. Suddenly, his knees failed him; he staggered and fell at full length, with his face to the ground.

But at the same time that he thus fell he fully resolved not to get up again, — at all events, of his own free will; and he received a lash from a horsewhip which wound round his loins.

With a tremendous oath, which was not unfamiliar to his ears, a well-known voice cried out to him, —

"How now, you stupid fellow! how now, you simpleton! have you sworn to founder Cadet?"

The name of Cadet at once dispelled all Pitou's suspense.

"Ah!" cried he, turning himself round, so that instead of lying upon his face he lay upon his back. "Ah! I hear the voice of Monsieur Billot!"

It was, in fact, Goodman Billot. When Pitou was well assured of his identity, he assumed a sitting posture.

The farmer, on his side, had pulled up Cadet, covered with flakes of foam.

"Ah!" dear Monsieur Billot," exclaimed Pitou, "how kind it is of you to ride in this way after me! I swear to you I should have returned to the farm after having expended the double-louis Mademoiselle Catherine gave me. But since you are here, take back your double-louis, — for of course it must be yours, — and let us return to the farm."

"A thousand devils!" exclaimed Billot; "who was thinking of the farm? Where are the *mouchards*?"

"The *mouchards*?" inquired Pitou, who did not comprehend the meaning of this word, which had only just been admitted into the vocabulary of our language.

"Yes, the *mouchards*,"¹ rejoined Billot, — "the men in black? Do you not understand me?"

"Ah! the men in black? You will readily understand, my dear Monsieur Billot, that I did not amuse myself by waiting for them."

"Bravo! You have left them behind, then?"

"Why, I flatter myself, after the race I have run, it was to be expected, as it appears to me."

"Then, if you were so sure of your affair, what the devil made you run at such a rate?"

"Because I thought it was their chief, who, not to be outwitted, was pursuing me on horseback."

"Well, well! You are not quite so simple as I thought you. Then, as the road is clear, up, up, and away for Dammartin!"

"What do you mean by 'Up, up'?"

"Yes, get up and come with me."

"We are going, then, to Dammartin?"

"Yes; I will borrow a horse there of old Lefranc. I will leave Cadet with him, for he can go no farther; and to-night we will push on to Paris."

"Be it so, Monsieur Billot; be it so."

"Well, then, up! up!"

Pitou made an effort to obey him.

"I should much wish to do as you desire," said he; "but, my dear Monsieur Billot, I cannot."

"How! you cannot get up?"

"No."

"But, just now, you could manage to turn round."

"Oh, just now! that was by no means astonishing. I

¹ Spies, — common informers, — men who live by betraying others. —

heard your voice, and at the same moment I received a swinging cut across the back; but such things can only succeed once. At present, I am accustomed to your voice; and as to your whip, I feel well assured that you can only apply it to managing our poor Cadet, who is almost as heated as I am."

Pitou's logic, which, after all, was nothing more than the Abbé Fortier's, persuaded, and even affected, the farmer.

"I have not time to sympathise in your fate," said he to Pitou; "but, come now, make an effort, and get up behind me."

"Why," said Pitou, "that would be indeed the way to founder Cadet at once, poor beast!"

"Pooh! in half an hour we shall be at old Lefranc's."

"But it appears to me, dear Monsieur Billot," said Pitou, "that it would be altogether useless for me to go with you to old Lefranc's."

"And why so?"

"Because, although you have business at Dammartin, I have no business there, — not I."

"Yes; but I want you to come to Paris with me. In Paris you will be of use to me. You have good stout fists; and I am certain it will not be long before hard knocks will be given there."

"Ah! ah!" cried Pitou, not much delighted with this prospect; "do you believe that?"

And he managed to get on Cadet's back, Billot dragging him up as he would a sack of flour.

The good farmer soon got on the high road again, and so well managed his bridle, whip, and spurs that in less than half an hour, as he had said, they reached Dammartin.

Billot had entered the town by a narrow lane, which was well known to him. He soon arrived at Father Lefranc's farmhouse, and, leaving Pitou and Cadet in the middle of the farmyard, he ran straight to the kitchen,

where Father Lefranc, who was setting out to take a turn round his fields, was buttoning on his gaiters.

"Quick! quick! my friend!" cried Billot, before Lefranc had recovered from the astonishment which his arrival had produced, "the strongest horse you have!"

"That is Margot," replied Lefranc; "and fortunately she is already saddled. I was going out."

"Well, Margot be it, then; only it is possible I may founder her, and of that I forewarn you."

"What! founder Margot! and why so, I ask?"

"Because it is necessary that I should be in Paris this very night."

And he made a masonic sign to Lefranc, which was most significant.

"Well, founder Margot, if you will," said old Lefranc; "you shall give me Cadet, if you do."

"Agreed."

"A glass of wine?"

"Two."

"But it seemed to me that you were not alone?"

"No; I have a worthy lad there whom I am taking with me, and who is so fatigued that he had not the strength to come in here. Send out something to him."

"Immediately, immediately," said the farmer.

In ten minutes the two old comrades had each managed to soak in a bottle of good wine; and Pitou had bolted a two-pound loaf with half a pound of bacon. While he was eating, one of the farm servants, a good fellow, rubbed him down with a handful of clean straw to take the mud from his clothes, and with as much care as if he had been cleaning a favourite horse.

Thus freshened up and invigorated, Pitou had also some wine given to him, taken from a third bottle, which was the sooner emptied from Pitou's having his share of it; after which Billot mounted Margot, and Pitou, stiff as a pair of compasses, was lifted on behind him.

The poor beast, being thereunto urged by whip and spur,

immediately trotted off bravely under this double load on the road to Paris, and without ceasing whisked away the flies with its formidable tail, the thick hair of which threw the dust of the road on Pitou's back, and every now and then lashed his calfless legs, which were exposed to view, his stockings having fallen down to his ankles.

CHAPTER X.

WHAT WAS HAPPENING AT THE END OF THE ROAD WHICH PITOU WAS TRAVELLING UPON, — THAT IS TO SAY, AT PARIS.

It is eight leagues from Dammartin to Paris. The first four leagues were tolerably well got over; but after they reached Bourget, poor Margot's legs at length began to grow somewhat stiff. Night was closing in.

On arriving at La Villette, Billot thought he perceived a great light extending over Paris.

He made Pitou observe the red light, which rose above the horizon.

"You do not see, then," said Pitou to him, "that there are troops bivouacking, and that they have lighted their fires."

"What mean you by troops?" cried Billot.

"There are troops here," said Pitou; "why should there not be some farther on?"

And, in fact, on examining attentively, Father Billot saw, on looking to the right, that the plain of Saint-Denis was dotted over with black-looking detachments of infantry and cavalry, which were marching silently in the darkness.

Their arms glistened occasionally with the pale reflection of the stars.

Pitou, whose nocturnal excursions in the woods had accustomed him to see clearly in the dark, — Pitou pointed out to his master pieces of artillery which had sunk up to the axles in the middle of the muddy plain.

"Oh! oh!" cried Billot, "there is something new up yonder, then! Let us make haste! Let us make haste!"

"Yes, yes; there is a fire out yonder," said Pitou, who had raised himself on Margot's back. "Look! look! Do you not see the sparks?"

Margot stopped. Billot jumped off her back, and, approaching a group of soldiers in blue and yellow uniform, who were bivouacking under the trees by the roadside, —

"Comrades," said he to them, "can you tell me what there is going on at Paris?"

But the soldiers merely replied to him by oaths, which they uttered in the German language.

"What the devil is it they say?" inquired Billot, addressing Pitou.

"It is not Latin, dear Monsieur Billot," replied Pitou, trembling; "and that is all I can affirm to you."

Billot reflected, and looked again.

"Simpleton that I was," said he, "to attempt to question these Kaiserliks."

And, in his curiosity, he remained motionless in the middle of the road.

An officer went up to him.

"Bass on your roat," said he; "bass on quickly."

"Your pardon, captain," replied Billot; "but I am going to Paris."

"Vell, mein Gott! vot den?"

"And as I see that you are drawn up across the road, I fear that we cannot get through the barriers."

"You can get drough."

And Billot remounted his mare, and went on.

But it was only to fall in the midst of the Bercheur Hussars, who encumbered the street of La Villette.

This time he had to deal with his own countrymen; he questioned them with more success.

"Monsieur," said he, "what has there happened at Paris, if you please?"

"That your headstrong Parisians," replied the hussar, "will have their Necker; and they are firing musket-shots at us, as if we had anything to do with the matter."

"Have Necker!" exclaimed Billot. "They have lost him, then?"

"Assuredly, since the king has dismissed him."

"The king has dismissed him!" exclaimed Billot, with the stupefaction of a devotee calling out against a sacrilege; "the king has dismissed that great man?"

"Oh! in faith he has, my worthy monsieur; and more than that, this great man is now on his road to Brus-

"Well, then, in that case we shall see some fun," cried Billot, in a tremendous voice, without caring for the danger he was incurring by thus preaching insurrection in the midst of twelve or fifteen hundred royalist sabres.

And he again mounted Margot, spurring her on with cruel violence, until he reached the barrier.

As he advanced, he perceived that the fire was increasing and becoming redder. A long column of flame ascended from the barrier towards the sky.

It was the barrier itself that was burning.

A howling, furious mob, in which there were many women, and who, as usual, threatened and vociferated more loudly than the men, were feeding the fire with pieces of wainscoting, and chairs and tables, and other articles of furniture belonging to the clerks employed to collect the city dues.¹

Upon the road were Hungarian and German regiments, who, leaning upon their grounded arms, were looking on with vacant eyes at this scene of devastation.

Billot did not allow this rampart of flames to arrest his progress; he spurred on Margot through the fire. Margot rushed through the flaming ruins; but when she had reached the inner side of the barrier she was obliged to stop, being met by a crowd of people coming from the centre of the

¹ The city of Paris is encircled by a wall, and at every entrance to it is a custom-house, where people coming from the country are obliged to give an account of their produce, — poultry, meal, butter, eggs, etc., — and pay the city dues upon it. — TRANSLATOR.

city towards the suburbs. Some of them were singing, others shouting, "To arms!"

Billot had the appearance of being what he really was, —a good farmer coming to Paris on his own affairs. Perhaps he cried out rather too loudly, "Make room! make room!" but Pitou repeated the words so politely, "Room, if you please, let us pass!" that the one was a corrective of the other. No one had any interest in preventing Billot from going to his affairs, and he was allowed to pass.

Margot, during all this, had recovered her wind and strength; the fire had singed her coat. All these unaccustomed shouts appeared greatly to amaze her, and Billot was obliged to restrain the efforts she now made to advance, for fear of trampling under foot some of the numerous spectators whom curiosity had drawn together before their doors to see the gate on fire, and as many curious people who were running from their doors towards the burning toll-house.

Billot went on pushing through the crowd, pulling Margot first to the right, and then to the left, twisting and turning in every direction, until they reached the boulevard; but having got thus far, he was obliged to stop.

A procession was then passing, coming from the Bastille, and going towards the place called the Garde Meuble, those two masses of stone which in those days formed a girdle which attached the centre of the city to its outworks.

This procession, which obstructed the whole of the boulevard, was following a bier; on this bier were borne two busts, —the one veiled with black crape, and the other crowned with flowers.

The bust covered with black crape was that of Necker, a minister who had not been disgraced, but dismissed. The one crowned with flowers was that of the Duke of Orleans, who had openly espoused at court the party of the Genevese economists.

Billot immediately inquired what was the meaning of

this procession. He was informed that it was a popular homage paid to Monsieur Necker and to his defender, the Duke of Orleans.

Billot had been born in a part of the country where the name of a Duke of Orleans had been venerated for a century and a half. Billot belonged to the new sect of philosophers, and considered Necker not only as a great minister, but as an apostle of humanity.

This was more than sufficient to excite Billot. He jumped off his horse, without being exactly aware of what he was about to do, shouting, "Long live the Duke of Orleans! long live Necker!" and he then mingled with the crowd. Having once got into the thick of the throng, all personal liberty was at an end at once; as every one knows, the use of our free will at once ceases. We wish what the crowd wishes, we do what it does. Billot, moreover, allowed himself the more easily to be drawn into this movement, from being near the head of the procession.

The mob kept on vociferating most strenuously, "Long live Necker! No more foreign troops! Down with the foreign troops!"

Billot mingled his stentorian voice with all these voices.

A superiority, be it of whatsoever nature it may, is always appreciated by the people. The Parisian of the suburbs, with his faint, hoarse voice, enfeebled by inanition or worn out by drinking, duly appreciated the full, rich, and sonorous voice of Billot, and readily made way for him, so that, without being too much elbowed, too much pushed about, too much pressed by the crowd, Billot at length managed to get close up to the bier.

About ten minutes after this, one of the bearers, whose enthusiasm had been greater than his strength, yielded his place to Billot.

As has been seen, the honest farmer had rapidly obtained promotion.

The day before he had been merely the propagator of the principles contained in Doctor Gilbert's pamphlet, and now

he had become one of the instruments of the great triumph of Necker and the Duke of Orleans.

But he had scarcely attained this post when an idea crossed his mind.

"What had become of Pitou? What had become of Margot?"

Though carefully bearing his portion of the bier, he gave a glance behind him, and by the light of the torches which accompanied the procession, by the light of the lamps which illuminated every window, he perceived in the midst of the procession a sort of ambulating eminence, formed of five or six men, who were gesticulating and shouting.

Amidst these gesticulations and shouts it was easy to distinguish the voice and recognise the long arms of his follower, Pitou.

Pitou was doing all he could to protect Margot; but despite all his efforts, Margot had been invaded. Margot no longer bore Billot and Pitou, — a very honourable and sufficient burden for the poor animal.

Margot was bearing as many people as could manage to get upon her back, her croup, her neck; Margot looked in the obscurity of the night, which always magnifies the appearance of objects, like an elephant loaded with hunters going to attack a tiger.

Five or six furious fellows had taken possession of Margot's broad back, vociferating, "Long live Necker!" "Long live the Duke of Orleans!" "Down with the foreigners!" To which Pitou replied, —

"You will break Margot's back!"

The enthusiasm was general.

Billot for a moment entertained the idea of rushing to the aid of Pitou and poor Margot; but he reflected that if he should only for a moment resign the honour of carrying one of the corners of the bier, he would not be able to regain his triumphal post. Then he reflected that, by the barter he had agreed to with old Lefranc, that of giving

him Cadet for Margot, Margot belonged to him, and that, should any accident happen to Margot, it was after all but an affair of some three or four hundred livres, and that he, Billot, was undoubtedly rich enough to make the sacrifice of three or four hundred livres to his country.

During this time the procession kept on advancing; it had moved obliquely to the left, and had gone down the Rue Montmartre to the Place des Victoires. When it reached the Palais Royal some great impediment prevented its passing on. A troop of men with green leaves in their hats were shouting, "To arms!"

It was necessary to reconnoitre. Were these men who blocked up the Rue Vivienne friends or enemies? Green was the colour of the Count d'Artois. Why then these green cockades?

After a minute's conference all was explained.

On learning the dismissal of Necker, a young man had issued from the Café Foy, had jumped upon a table in the garden of the Palais Royal, and, taking a pistol from his breast, had cried, "To arms!"

On hearing this cry, all the persons who were walking there had assembled round him, and had shouted, "To arms!"

We have already said that all the foreign regiments had been collected around Paris. One might have imagined that it was an invasion by the Austrians. The names of these regiments alarmed the ears of all Frenchmen; they were Reynac, Salis Samade, Diesbach, Esterhazy, Roemer; the very naming of them was sufficient to make the crowd understand that they were the names of enemies. The young man named them; he announced that the Swiss were encamped in the Champs Élysées, with four pieces of artillery, and that they were to enter Paris the same night, preceded by the dragoons, commanded by Prince Lambesq. He proposed a new cockade which was not theirs, snatched a leaf from a chestnut tree and placed it in the band of his hat. Upon the instant every one present followed his

example. Three thousand persons had in ten minutes un-leaved the trees of the Palais Royal.

That morning no one knew the name of that young man; in the evening it was in every mouth.

That young man's name was Camille Desmoulins.

The two crowds recognised each other as friends; they fraternised, they embraced each other, and then the procession continued on its way.

During the momentary halt we have just described, the curiosity of those who had not been able to discover, even by standing on tiptoe, what was going on, had overloaded Margot with an increasing burden. Every inch on which a foot could be placed had been invaded, so that when the crowd again moved on the poor beast was literally crushed by the enormous weight which overwhelmed her.

At the corner of the Rue Richelieu, Billot cast a look behind him; Margot had disappeared.

He heaved a deep sigh, addressed to the memory of the unfortunate animal; then, soon recovering from his grief, and calling up the whole power of his voice, he three times called Pitou, as did the Romans of ancient times when attending the funeral of a relative. He imagined that he heard, issuing from the centre of the crowd, a voice which replied to his own, but that voice was lost among the confused clamours which ascended towards the heavens, half threatening, half with applauding acclamations.

The procession still moved on.

All the shops were closed; but all the windows were open, and from every window issued cries of encouragement, which fell like blessings on the heads of those who formed this great ovation.

In this way they reached the Place Vendôme.

But on arriving there the procession was obstructed by an unforeseen obstacle.

Like to those trunks of trees rooted up by a river that has overflowed its banks, and which, on encountering the piers of a bridge, recoil upon the wreck of matter which is

following them, the popular army found a detachment of the Royal Germans on the Place Vendôme.

These foreign soldiers were dragoons, who, seeing an inundation streaming from the Rue Saint-Honoré, which began to overflow the Place Vendôme, loosened their horses' reins, who, impatient at having been stationed there during five hours, at once galloped furiously forward, charging upon the people.

The bearers of the bier received the first shock, and were thrown down beneath their burden. A Savoyard, who was walking before Billot, was the first to spring to his feet again, raised the effigy of the Duke of Orleans, and, placing it on the top of a stick, held it above his head, crying, "Long live the Duke of Orleans!" whom he had never seen; and "Long live Necker!" whom he did not know.

Billot was about to do as much for the bust of Necker, but found himself forestalled. A young man about twenty-four or twenty-five years old, and sufficiently well dressed to deserve the title of a beau, had followed it with his eyes, which he could do more easily than Billot, who was carrying it; and as soon as the bust had fallen to the ground, he had rushed towards it and seized upon it.

The good farmer, therefore, vainly endeavoured to find it on the ground: the bust of Necker was already on the point of a sort of pike, and, side by side with that of the Duke of Orleans, rallied around them a good portion of the procession.

Suddenly a great light illuminates the square; at the same moment a violent explosion is heard; the balls whiz through the air; something heavy strikes Billot on the forehead; he falls. At first, Billot imagined himself killed.

But, as his senses had not abandoned him, and excepting a violent pain in the head he felt no injury, Billot comprehended that he was, even at the worst, but wounded. He pressed his hand to his forehead to ascertain the extent of damage he had received, and perceived at one and the

same time that he had only a contusion on the head, and that his hand was streaming with blood.

The elegantly dressed young man who had supplanted Billot had received a ball full in his breast. It was he who had died. The blood on Billot's hands was his. The blow which Billot had experienced was from the bust of Necker, which, losing its supporter, had fallen upon his head.

Billot utters a cry, partly of anger, partly of terror.

He draws back from the young man, who was convulsed in the agonies of death. Those who surrounded him also draw back; and the shout he had uttered, repeated by the crowd, is prolonged like a funeral echo by the groups assembled in the Rue Saint-Honoré.

This shout was a second rebellion.

A second detonation was then heard; and immediately deep vacancies hollowed in the mass attested the passage of the murderous projectiles.

To pick up the bust, the whole face of which was stained with blood; to raise it above his head, and protest against this outrage with his sonorous voice, at the risk of being shot down, as had been the handsome young man whose body was then lying at his feet, was what Billot's indignation prompted him to effect, and which he did in the first moment of his enthusiasm.

But at the same instant a large and powerful hand was placed upon the farmer's shoulder, and with so much vigour that he was compelled to bend down beneath its weight. The farmer wishes to relieve himself from this pressure; another hand, no less heavy than the first, falls on his other shoulder. He turned round, reddening with anger, to ascertain what sort of antagonist he had to contend with.

"Pitou!" he exclaimed.

"Yes, yes," replied Pitou. "Down! down! and you will soon see."

And, redoubling his efforts, he managed to drag with him to the ground the opposing farmer.

No sooner had he forced Billot to lie down flat upon the pavement, than another discharge was heard. The Savoyard who was carrying the bust of the Duke of Orleans fell in his turn.

Then was heard the crushing of the pavement beneath the horses' hoofs; then the dragoons charged a second time; a horse, with streaming mane, and furious as that of the Apocalypse, bounds over the unfortunate Savoyard, who feels the coldness of a lance penetrate his breast. He falls on Billot and Pitou.

The tempest rushed onwards towards the end of the street, spreading as it passed terror and death. Dead bodies alone remained on the pavement of the square. All those who had formed the procession fled through the adjacent streets. The windows are instantly closed,—a gloomy silence succeeds to the shouts of enthusiasm and the cries of anger.

Billot waited a moment, still restrained by the prudent Pitou; then, feeling that the danger was becoming more distant with the noise, while Pitou like a hare in its form, was beginning to raise, not his head, but his ears.

"Well, Monsieur Billot," said Pitou, "I think that you spoke truly, and that we have arrived here in the nick of time."

"Come, now, help me!"

"And what to do: to run away?"

"No. The young dandy is dead as a door-nail; but the poor Savoyard, in my opinion, has only fainted. Help me to put him on my back. We cannot leave him here, to be finished by those damned Germans."

Billot spoke a language which went straight to Pitou's heart. He had no answer to make but to obey. He took up the fainting and bleeding body of the poor Savoyard, and threw him as he would have done a sack across the shoulders of the robust farmer; who, seeing that the Rue Saint-Honoré was free, and in all appearance deserted, advanced with Pitou towards the Palais Royal.

CHAPTER XI.

THE NIGHT BETWEEN THE TWELFTH AND THIRTEENTH OF JULY.

THE street had, in the first place, appeared empty and deserted to Billot and Pitou, because the dragoons, being engaged in the pursuit of the great body of the fugitives had turned into the market of Saint-Honoré, and had followed them up the Rue Louis-le-Grand and the Rue Gaillon. But as Billot advanced towards the Palais Royal, roaring instinctively, but in a subdued voice, the word "Vengeance!" men made their appearance at the corners of the streets, at the end of alleys, and from under the carriage gateways, who at first, mute and terrified, looked around them, but being at length assured of the absence of the dragoons, brought up the rear of this funereal march, repeating, first in hollow whispers, but soon aloud, and finally with shouts, the word "Vengeance! vengeance!"

Pitou walked behind the farmer, carrying the Savoyard's black cap in his hand.

They arrived thus, in gloomy and fearful procession, upon the square before the Palais Royal, where a whole people, drunk with rage, was holding council, and soliciting the support of French soldiers against the foreigners.

"Who are these men in uniform?" inquired Billot, on arriving in front of a company who were standing with grounded arms, stopping the passage across the square from the gate of the palace to the Rue de Chartres.

"They are the French Guards!" cried several voices.

"Ah!" exclaimed Billot, approaching them, and showing them the body of the Savoyard, which was now a lifeless

corpse, — “Ah! you are Frenchmen, and you allow us to be murdered by these Germans!”

The French Guards drew back with horror.

“Dead?” murmured a voice from within their ranks.

“Yes, dead! dead! assassinated! he and many more besides!”

“And by whom?”

“By the Royal German Dragoons. Did you not hear the cries, the firing, the galloping of their horses?”

“Yes, yes, we did!” cried two or three hundred voices. “They were butchering the people on the Place Vendôme!”

“And you are part of the people; by Heaven, you are!” cried Billot, addressing the soldiers. “It is therefore cowardly in you to allow your brothers to be butchered.”

“Cowardly!” exclaimed several threatening voices in the ranks.

“Yes, cowardly! I have said it, and I repeat the word. Come now,” continued Billot, advancing three steps towards the spot from whence these murmurs had proceeded, “well now, will you not kill me, in order to prove that you are not cowards?”

“Good! that is all well, very well,” said one of the soldiers. “You are a brave fellow, my friend; but you are a citizen, and can do what you will; but a military man is a soldier, do you see, and he must obey orders.”

“So that,” replied Billot, “if you had received orders to fire upon us — that is to say, upon unarmed men — you would fire: you who have succeeded the men of Fontenoy! you who gave the advantage to the English, by telling them to fire first!”

“As to me, I know that I would not fire, for one,” said a voice from the ranks.

“Nor I! — nor I!” repeated a hundred voices.

“The dragoons! the dragoons!” cried several voices at the same time that the crowd, driven backwards, began to throng the square, flying by the Rue de Richelieu.

And there was heard the distant sound of the galloping

of heavy cavalry upon the pavement, but which became louder at every moment.

"To arms! to arms!" cried the fugitives.

"A thousand gods!" cried Billot, throwing the dead body of the Savoyard upon the ground, which he had till then held in his arms; "give us your muskets, at least, if you will not yourselves make use of them."

"Well, then, yes; by a thousand thunders, we will make use of them!" said the soldier to whom Billot had addressed himself, snatching out of his hand his musket, which the other had already seized. "Come, come! let us bite our cartridges, and if the Austrians have anything to say to these brave fellows, we shall see!"

"Yes, yes, we'll see!" cried the soldiers, putting their hands into their cartouche-boxes and biting off the ends of their cartridges.

"Oh, thunder!" cried Billot, stamping his feet; "and to think that I have not brought my fowling-piece! But perhaps one of those rascally Austrians will be killed, and then I will take his carbine."

"In the mean time," said a voice, "take this carbine; it is ready loaded."

And at the same time an unknown man slipped a richly mounted carbine into Billot's hands.

At that instant the dragoons galloped into the square, riding down and sabreing all that were in their way.

The officer who commanded the French Guards advanced four steps.

"Hilloa, there, gentlemen dragoons!" cried he, "halt there, if you please!"

Whether the dragoons did not hear, or whether they did not choose to hear, or whether they could not at once arrest the violent course of their horses, they rode across the square, making a half-wheel to the right, and ran over a woman and an old man, who disappeared beneath their horses' heels.

"Fire, then, fire!" cried Billot.

Billot was standing close to the officer. It might have been thought that it was the latter who had given the word.

The French Guards presented their guns, and fired a volley, which at once brought the dragoons to a stand.

"Why, gentlemen of the Guards," said a German officer, advancing in front of his disordered squadron, "do you know that you are firing upon us?"

"Do we not know it?" cried Billot; and he fired at the officer, who fell from his horse.

Then the French Guards fired a second volley, and the Germans, seeing that they had on this occasion to deal, not with plain citizens, who would fly at the first sabre cut, but with soldiers, who firmly waited their attack, turned to the right about, and galloped back to the Place Vendôme, amidst so formidable an explosion of bravoos and shouts of triumph, that several of their horses, terrified at the noise, ran off with their riders, and knocked their heads against the closed shutters of the shops.

"Long live the French Guards!" cried the people.

"Long live the soldiers of the country!" cried Billot.

"Thanks," replied the latter. "We have smelt gunpowder, and we are now baptised."

"And I too," said Pitou, "I have smelt gunpowder."

"And what do you think of it?" inquired Billot.

"Why, really, I do not find it so disagreeable as I had expected," replied Pitou.

"But now," said Billot, who had had time to examine the carbine, and had ascertained that it was a weapon of some value, "but now, to whom belongs this gun?"

"To my master," said the voice, which had already spoken behind him. "But my master thinks that you make too good use of it to take it back again."

Billot turned round, and perceived a huntsman in the livery of the Duke of Orleans.

"And where is your master?" said he.

The huntsman pointed to a half-open Venetian blind,

behind which the prince had been watching all that had passed.

"Your master is then on our side?" asked Billot.

"With the people, heart and soul," replied the huntsman.

"In that case, once more, 'Long live the Duke of Orleans!'" cried Billot. "My friends, the Duke of Orleans is with us. Long live the Duke of Orleans!"

And he pointed to the blind behind which the prince stood.

Then the blind was thrown completely open, and the Duke of Orleans bowed three times.

After which the blind was again closed.

Although of such short duration, his appearance had wound up the enthusiasm of the people to its acme.

"Long live the Duke of Orleans!" vociferated two or three thousand voices.

"Let us break open the armourers' shops!" cried a voice in the crowd.

"Let us run to the Invalides!" cried some old soldiers. "Sombreuil has twenty thousand muskets."

"To the Invalides!"

"To the Hôtel de Ville!" exclaimed several voices. "Flesselles, the Provost of the Merchants, has the key of the depot in which the arms of the Guards are kept. He will give them to us."

"To the Hôtel de Ville!" cried a fraction of the crowd.

And the whole crowd dispersed, taking the three directions which had been pointed out.

During this time the dragoons had rallied round the Baron de Bezenval and the Prince de Lambesq, on the Place Louis XV.

Of this Billot and Pitou were ignorant. They had not followed either of the three troops of citizens, and they found themselves almost alone in the square before the Palais Royal.

"Well, dear Monsieur Billot, where are we to go next, if you please?" said Pitou.

"Why," replied Billot, "I should have desired to follow those worthy people; not to the gunmakers' shops, since I have such a beautiful carbine, but to the Hôtel de Ville, or to the Invalides. However, not having come to Paris to fight, but to find out the address of Doctor Gilbert, it appears to me that I ought to go to the College of Louis-le-Grand, where his son now is; and then, after having seen the doctor, why, we can throw ourselves again into this fighting business." And the eyes of the farmer flashed lightnings.

"To go in the first place to the College of Louis-le-Grand appears to me quite logical," sententiously observed Pitou; "since it was for that purpose that we came to Paris."

"Go, get a musket, a sabre, a weapon of some kind or other from some one or other of those idle fellows who are lying on the pavement yonder," said Billot, pointing to one out of five or six dragoons who were stretched upon the ground; "and let us at once go to the college."

"But these arms," said Pitou, hesitating, "they are not mine."

"Who, then, do they belong to?" asked Billot.

"To the king."

"They belong to the people," rejoined Billot.

And Pitou, strong in the opinion of the farmer, who knew that he was a man who would not rob a neighbour of a grain of millet, Pitou, with every necessary precaution, approached the dragoon who happened to be the nearest to him, and, after having assured himself that he was really dead, took from him his sabre, his musketoon, and his cartouche-box.

Pitou had a great desire to take his helmet also, only he was not quite certain that what Father Billot had said with regard to offensive weapons extended to defensive accoutrements.

But, while thus arming himself, Pitou directed his ears towards the Place Vendôme.

"Ho, ho!" said he, "it appears to me that the Royal Germans are coming this way again."

And, in fact, the noise of a troop of horsemen returning at a footpace could be heard. Pitou peeped from behind the corner of the coffee-house called *La Régence*, and perceived, at about the distance of the market of *Saint-Honoré*, a patrol of dragoons advancing, with their musketoons in hand.

"Oh, quick, quick!" cried Pitou, "here they are, coming back again."

Billot cast his eyes around him, to see if there was any means of offering resistance. There was scarcely a person in the square.

"Let us go, then," said he, "to the *College Louis-le-Grand*."

And he went up the *Rue de Chartres*, followed by Pitou, who, not knowing the use of the hook upon his belt, was dragging his long sabre after him.

"A thousand thunders!" exclaimed Billot: "why, you look like a dealer in old iron. Fasten me up that lath there."

"But how?" asked Pitou.

"Why, so, by Heaven! — there!" said Billot.

And he hooked Pitou's long sabre up to his belt, which enabled the latter to walk with more celerity than he could have done but for this expedient.

They pursued their way without meeting with any impediment till they reached the *Place Louis XV.*; but there Billot and Pitou fell in with the column which had left them to proceed to the *Invalides*, and which had been stopped short in its progress.

"Well!" cried Billot, "what is the matter?"

"The matter is, that we cannot go across the *Bridge Louis XV.*"

"But you can go along the quays."

"All passage is stopped that way too."

"And across the *Champs Élysées*?"

"Also."

"Then let us retrace our steps, and go over the bridge at the *Tuileries*."

The proposal was a perfectly natural one; and the crowd, by following Billot, showed that they were eager to accede to it. But they saw sabres gleaming half-way between them and the Tuileries Gardens. The quay was occupied by a squadron of dragoons.

"Why, these cursed dragoons are, then, everywhere," murmured the farmer.

"I say, my dear Monsieur Billot," said Pitou, "I believe that we are caught."

"Pshaw! they cannot catch five or six thousand men; and we are five or six thousand men at least."

The dragoons on the quay were advancing slowly, it is true, at a very gentle walk; but they were visibly advancing.

"The Rue Royale still remains open to us. Come this way: come, Pitou."

Pitou followed the farmer as if he had been his shadow.

But a line of soldiers was drawn across the street, near the Saint-Honoré Gate.

"Ah, ah!" muttered Billot; "you may be in the right, friend Pitou."

"Hum!" was Pitou's sole reply.

But this word expressed, by the tone in which it had been pronounced, all the regret which Pitou felt at not having been mistaken.

The crowd, by its agitation and its clamours, proved that it was not less sensible than Pitou of the position in which it was then placed.

And in fact, by a skilful manœuvre, the Prince de Lambesq had surrounded not only the rebels, but also those who had been drawn there from mere curiosity; and, by preventing all egress by the bridges, the quays, the Champs Élysées, and the Rue Royale and Les Feuillants, he had enclosed them in a bow of iron, the string of which was represented by the walls of the Tuileries Gardens, which it would be very difficult to escalade, and the iron gate of the Pont Tournant, which it was almost impossible to force.

Billot reflected on their position; it certainly was not a

favourable one; however, as he was a man of calm, cool mind, full of resources when in danger, he cast his eyes around him, and, perceiving a pile of timber lying beside the river, —

“I have an idea,” said he to Pitou; “come this way.”

Pitou followed him, without asking him what the idea was

Billot advanced towards the timber, and, seizing the end of a large block, said to Pitou, “Help me to carry this.”

Pitou, for his part, without questioning him as to his intentions, caught hold of the other end of the piece of timber. He had such implicit confidence in the farmer, that he would have gone down to the infernal regions with him without even making any observation as to the length of the descent.

They were soon upon the quay again, bearing a load which five or six men of ordinary strength would have found difficult to raise.

Strength is always a subject of admiration to the mob, and, although so compactly huddled together, they made room for Billot and Pitou to pass through them.

Then, as they felt convinced that the manœuvre which was being accomplished was a manœuvre of general interest, some men walked before Billot, crying, “Make room! make room!”

“Tell me now, Father Billot,” inquired Pitou, after having carried the timber some thirty yards, “are we going far in this way?”

“We are going as far as the gate of the Tuileries.”

“Ho! ho!” cried the crowd, who at once divined his intention.

And it made way for them more eagerly even than before.

Pitou looked about him, and saw that the gate was not more than thirty paces distant from them.

“I can reach it,” said he, with the brevity of a Pythagorean.

The labour was so much the easier to Pitou from five or six of the strongest of the crowd taking their share in the

burden. The result of this was a very notable acceleration in their progress.

In five minutes they had reached the iron gate.

"Come, now," cried Billot, "clap your shoulders to it, and all push together."

"Good!" said Pitou. "I understand it now. We have just made a warlike engine; the Romans used to call it a ram."

"Now, my boys," cried Billot, "once, twice, thrice!" And the joist, directed with a furious impetus, struck the lock of the gate with resounding violence.

The soldiers who were on guard in the interior of the garden hastened to resist this invasion. But at the third stroke the gate gave way, turning violently on its hinges, and through that gaping and gloomy mouth the crowd rushed impetuously.

From the movement that was then made, the Prince de Lambesq perceived at once that an opening had been effected which allowed the escape of those whom he had considered as his prisoners. He was furious with disappointment. He urged his horse forward in order the better to judge of the position of affairs. The dragoons who were drawn up behind him imagined that the order had been given to charge, and they followed him. The horses, going off at full speed, could not be suddenly pulled up. The men, who wished to be revenged for the check they had received on the square before the Palais Royal, scarcely endeavoured to restrain them.

The prince saw that it would be impossible to moderate their advance, and allowed himself to be borne away by it. A sudden shriek uttered by the women and children ascended to Heaven, crying for vengeance against the brutal soldiers.

A frightful scene then occurred, rendered still more terrific by the darkness. Those who were charged upon became mad with pain; those who charged them were mad with anger.

Then a species of defence was organised from the top of

a terrace. The chairs were hurled down on the dragoons. The Prince de Lambesq, who had been struck on the head, replied by giving a sabre cut to the person nearest to him, without considering that he was punishing an innocent man instead of a guilty one, and an old man more than seventy years of age fell beneath his sword.

Billot saw this man fall, and uttered a loud cry. In a moment his carbine was at his shoulder. A furrow of light for a moment illuminated the darkness, and the prince had then died, had not his horse by chance reared at the same instant.

The horse received the ball in his neck, and fell.

It was thought that the prince was killed; the dragoons then rushed into the Tuileries, pursuing the fugitives, and firing their pistols at them.

But the fugitives, having now a greater space, dispersed among the trees.

Billot quietly reloaded his carbine.

"In good faith, Pitou," said he, "I think that you were right. We really have arrived in the nick of time."

"If I should become a bold, daring fellow!" said Pitou, discharging his musketoon at the thickest group of the dragoons. "It seems to me not so difficult as I had thought."

"Yes," replied Billot; "but useless courage is not real courage. Come this way, Pitou, and take care that your sword does not get between your legs."

"Wait a moment for me, dear Monsieur Billot; if I should lose you, I should not know which way to go. I do not know Paris as you do: I was never here before."

"Come along, come along," said Billot; and he went by the terrace by the water side, until he had got ahead of the line of troops, which were advancing along the quay; but this time as rapidly as they could, to give their aid to the Lambesq dragoons, should such aid be necessary.

When they reached the end of the terrace, Billot seated himself on the parapet and jumped on to the quay.

Pitou followed his example.

CHAPTER XII.

WHAT OCCURRED DURING THE NIGHT OF THE TWELFTH
JULY, 1789.

ONCE upon the quay, the two countrymen saw glittering on the bridge near the Tuileries the arms of another body of men, which in all probability was not a body of friends; they silently glided to the end of the quay and descended the bank which leads along the Seine.

The clock of the Tuileries was just then striking eleven.

When they had got beneath the trees which line the banks of the river, fine aspen trees and poplars, which bathe their feet in its current, — when they were lost to the sight of their pursuers, hid by their friendly foliage, — the farmer and Pitou threw themselves upon the grass and opened a council of war.

The question to decide, and this was suggested by the farmer, was whether they should remain where they were, — that is to say, in safety, or comparatively so, — or whether they should again throw themselves into the tumult, and take their share of the struggle which was going on, and which appeared likely to be continued the greater part of the night.

The question being mooted, Billot awaited the reply of Pitou.

Pitou had risen very greatly in the opinion of the farmer. In the first place, by the knowledge of which he had given proofs the day before, and afterwards by the courage of which he had given such proofs during the evening.

Pitou instinctively felt this, but, instead of being prouder from it, he was only the more grateful towards the good farmer. Pitou was naturally very humble.

"Monsieur Billot," said he, "it is evident that you are more brave, and I less a poltroon than I imagined. Horace, who, however, was a very different man from us, with regard to poetry, at least, threw away his arms and ran off at the very first blow. As to me, I have still my musketoon, my cartridge-box, and my sabre, which proves that I am braver than Horace."

"Well! what are you driving at?"

"What I mean is this, dear Monsieur Billot, that the bravest man in the world may be killed by a ball."

"And what then?" inquired the farmer.

"And then, my dear monsieur, thus it is: as you stated, on leaving your farm, that you were coming to Paris for an important object —"

"Oh, confound it! that is true, for the casket."

"Well, then, did you come about this casket, yes or no?"

"I came about the casket, by a thousand thunders, and for nothing else."

"If you should allow yourself to be killed by a ball, the affair for which you came cannot be accomplished."

"In truth, you are ten times right, Pitou."

"Do you hear that crashing noise, — those cries?" continued Pitou, encouraged by the farmer's approbation; "wood is being torn like paper, iron is twisted as if it were but hemp."

"It is because the people are angry, Pitou."

"But it appears to me," Pitou ventured to say, "that the king is tolerably angry too."

"How say you, the king?"

"Undoubtedly: the Austrians, the Germans, the Kaiserliks, as you call them, are the king's soldiers. Well! if they charge the people, it is the king who orders them to charge, and for him to give such an order he must be angry too."

"You are both right and wrong, Pitou."

"That does not appear possible to me, Monsieur Billot,

and I dare not say to you that, had you studied logic, you would not venture on such a paradox."

"You are right and you are wrong, Pitou, and I will presently make you comprehend how this can be."

"I do not ask anything better, but I doubt it."

"See you, now, Pitou, there are two parties at court, — that of the king, who loves the people, and that of the queen, who loves the Austrians."

"That is because the king is a Frenchman, and the queen an Austrian," philosophically replied Pitou.

"Wait a moment. On the king's side are Monsieur Turgot and Monsieur Necker, on the queen's, Monsieur de Breteuil and the Polignacs. The king is not the master, since he has been obliged to send away Monsieur Turgot and Monsieur Necker. It is therefore the queen who is the mistress, the Breteuils and the Polignacs — therefore all goes badly.

Do you see, Pitou, the evil proceeds from Madame Deficit? and Madame Deficit is in a rage, and it is in her name that the troops charge; the Austrians defend the Austrian woman, that is natural enough."

"Your pardon, Monsieur Billot," said Pitou, interrupting him, "but *deficit* is a Latin word, which means to say a want of something. What is it that is wanting?"

"Zounds! why, money, to be sure; and it is because money is wanting, it is because the queen's favourites have devoured this money which is wanting, that the queen is called Madame Deficit. It is not therefore the king who is angry, but the queen. The king is only vexed, — vexed that everything goes so badly."

"I comprehend," said Pitou; "but the casket?"

"That is true, that is true, Pitou; these devilish politics always drag me on farther than I would go. Yes, the casket, before everything. You are right, Pitou; when I shall have seen Doctor Gilbert, why then we can return to politics. It is a sacred duty."

"There is nothing more sacred than sacred duties," said Pitou.

"Well, then, let us go to the College Louis-le-Grand, where Sébastien Gilbert now is," said Billot.

"Let us go," said Pitou, sighing; for he would be compelled to leave a bed of moss-like grass, to which he had accustomed himself. Besides which, notwithstanding the over-excitement of the evening, sleep, the assiduous host of pure consciences and tired limbs, had descended with all its poppies to welcome the virtuous and heartily tired Pitou.

Billot was already on his feet, and Pitou was about to rise, when the half-hour struck.

"But," said Billot, "at half-past eleven o'clock the College of Louis-le-Grand must, it would appear to me, be closed."

"Oh, most assuredly!" said Pitou.

"And then, in the dark," continued Billot, "we might fall into some ambuscade; it seems to me that I see the fires of a bivouac in the direction of the Palace of Justice; I may be arrested, or I may be killed. You are right, Pitou, I must not be arrested, — I must not be killed."

It was the third time since that morning that Pitou's ears had been saluted with those words so flattering to human pride, —

"You are right."

Pitou thought he could not do better than to repeat the words of Billot.

"You are right," he repeated, lying down again upon the grass; "you must not allow yourself to be killed, dear Monsieur Billot."

And the conclusion of this phrase died away in Pitou's throat. *Vox faucibus hæsit*, he might have added, had he been awake, but he was fast asleep.

Billot did not perceive it.

"An idea," said he.

"Ah!" snored Pitou.

"Listen to me, I have an idea. Notwithstanding all the precautions I am taking, I may be killed. I may be

cut down by a sabre or killed from a distance by a ball, — killed suddenly upon the spot; if that should happen, you ought to know what you will have to say to Doctor Gilbert in my stead; but you must be mute, Pitou.”

Pitou heard not a word of this, and consequently made no reply.

“Should I be wounded mortally, and not be able to fulfil my mission, you will, in my place, seek out Doctor Gilbert, and you will say to him — do you understand me, Pitou?” added the farmer, stooping towards his companion, “and you will say to him — why, confound him, he is positively snoring, the sad fellow!”

All the excitement of Billot was at once damped on ascertaining that Pitou was asleep.

“Well, let us sleep, then?” said he; and he laid himself down by Pitou’s side, without grumbling very seriously. For, however accustomed to fatigue, the ride of the previous day and the events of the evening did not fail to have a soporific effect on the good farmer.

And the day broke about three hours after they had gone to sleep, or rather, we should say, after their senses were benumbed.

When they again opened their eyes, Paris had lost nothing of that savage countenance which they had observed the night before.

Only there were no soldiers to be seen, the people were everywhere, — the people arming themselves with pikes, hastily manufactured, with muskets, which the majority of them knew not how to handle, with magnificent weapons made centuries before, and of which the bearers admired the ornaments, some being inlaid with gold or ivory, or mother of pearl, without comprehending the use or the mechanism of them.

Immediately after the retreat of the soldiers, the populace had pillaged the palace called the Garde-Meuble.

And the people dragged towards the Hôtel de Ville two small pieces of artillery.

The alarm-bell was rung from the towers of Notre Dame, at the Hôtel de Ville, and in all the parish churches. There were seen issuing—and from where no one could tell, but as from beneath the pavement—legions of men and women, squalid, emaciated, in filthy rags, half naked, who but the evening before cried, "Give us bread!" but now vociferated, "Give us arms!"

Nothing could be more terrifying than these bands of spectres, who, during the last three months, had poured into the capital from the country, passing through the city gates silently, and installing themselves in Paris, where famine reigned, like Arabian ghouls in a cemetery.

On that day the whole of France, represented in Paris by the starving people from each province, cried to its king, "Give us liberty!" and to its God, "Give us food!"

Billot, who was first to awake, roused up Pitou, and they both set off to the College Louis-le-Grand, looking around them shuddering and terrified at the miserable creatures they saw on every side.

By degrees, as they advanced towards that part of the town which we now call the Latin Quarter, as they ascended the Rue de la Harpe, as they approached the Rue Saint-Jacques, they saw, as during the times of La Fronde, barricades being raised in every street.

Women and children were carrying to the tops of the houses ponderous folio volumes, heavy pieces of furniture, and precious marble ornaments, destined to crush the foreign soldiers in case of their venturing into the narrow and tortuous streets of old Paris.

From time to time Billot observed one or two of the French Guards forming the centre of some meeting which they were organising, and which, with marvellous rapidity, they were teaching the handling of a musket,—exercises which women and children were curiously observing, and almost with a desire of learning them themselves.

Billot and Pitou found the College Louis-le-Grand in flagrant insurrection; the pupils had risen against their

teachers, and had driven them from the building. At the moment when the farmer and his companion reached the grated gate, the scholars were attacking this gate, uttering loud threats, to which the affrighted principal replied with tears.

The farmer for a moment gazed on this intestine revolt, when suddenly, in a stentorian voice, he cried out, —

“Which of you here is called Sébastien Gilbert?”

“’T is I,” replied a young lad, about fifteen years of age, of almost feminine beauty, and who, with the assistance of four or five of his comrades, was carrying a ladder wherewith to escalate the walls, seeing that they could not force open the gate.

“Come nearer to me, my child.”

“What is it that you want with me?” said young Sébastien to Billot.

“Do you wish to take him away?” cried the principal, terrified at the aspect of two armed men, one of whom, the one who had spoken to young Gilbert, was covered with blood.

The boy, on his side, looked with astonishment at these two men, and was endeavouring, but uselessly, to recognise his foster brother, Pitou, who had grown so immeasurably tall since he last saw him, and who was altogether metamorphosed by the warlike accoutrements he had put on.

“Take him away!” exclaimed Billot; “take away Monsieur Gilbert’s son, and lead him into all this turmoil! expose him to receiving some unhappy blow! Oh! no indeed!”

“Do you see, Sébastien?” said the principal; “do you see, you furious fellow, that even your friends will have nothing to do with you? For, in short, these gentlemen appear to be your friends. Come, gentlemen, come, my young pupils, come, my children,” cried the poor principal, “obey me — obey me, I command you — obey me, I entreat you.”

“*Oro obtestorque*,” said Pitou.

"Monsieur," said young Gilbert, with a firmness that was extraordinary in a youth of his age, "retain my comrades, if such be your pleasure, but as to me, do you understand me? I will go out."

He made a movement towards the gate; the professor caught him by the arm.

But he, shaking his fine auburn curls upon his pallid forehead, —

"Monsieur," said he, "beware what you are doing. I am not in the same position as your other pupils; — my father has been arrested, imprisoned; my father is in the power of the tyrants."

"In the power of the tyrants!" exclaimed Billot; "speak, my child; what is it that you mean?"

"Yes, yes," cried several of the scholars, "Sébastien is right; his father has been arrested; and since the people have opened the prisons, he wishes they should open his father's prison too."

"Oh, oh!" said the farmer, shaking the bars of the gate with his herculean arms, "they have arrested Doctor Gilbert, have they? By Heaven! my little Catherine, then, was right!"

"Yes, monsieur," continued young Gilbert, "they have arrested my father, and that is why I wish to get out, why I wish to take a musket, why I wish to fight until I have liberated my dear father."

And these words were accompanied and encouraged by a hundred furious voices, crying in every key, —

"Arms! arms! let us have arms!"

On hearing these cries, the crowd which had collected in the street, animated in its turn by an heroic ardour, rushed towards the gate to give liberty to the collegians.

The principal threw himself upon his knees between his scholars and the invaders, and held out his arms with a supplicating gesture: —

"Oh, my friends! my friends!" cried he, "respect my children!"

"Do we not respect them?" said a French Guard; "I believe we do, indeed. They are fine boys, and they will do their exercise admirably."

"My friends! my friends! These children are a sacred deposit which their parents have confided to me; I am responsible for them; their parents calculate upon me; for them I would sacrifice my life; but, in the name of Heaven, do not take away these children!"

Hootings proceeding from the street, that is to say, from the hindmost ranks of the crowd, replied to these piteous supplications.

Billot rushed forward, opposing the French Guards, the crowd, the scholars themselves:—

"He is right, it is a sacred trust; let men fight, let men get themselves killed, but let children live; they are seed for the future."

A disapproving murmur followed these words.

"Who is it that murmurs?" cried Billot; "assuredly, it cannot be a father. I, who am now speaking to you, had two men killed in my arms; their blood is upon my shirt. See this!"

And he showed his shirt and waistcoat all begrimed with blood, and with a dignified movement which electrified the crowd.

"Yesterday," continued Billot, "I fought at the Palais Royal and at the Tuileries; and this lad also fought there, but this lad has neither father nor mother; moreover, he is almost a man."

And he pointed to Pitou, who looked proudly around him.

"To-day," continued Billot, "I shall fight again; but let no one say to me, 'The Parisians were not strong enough to contend against the foreign soldiers, and they called children to their aid.'"

"Yes, yes," resounded on every side, proceeding from women in the crowd, and several of the soldiers; "he is right, children; go into the college; go into the college."

"Oh, thanks, thanks, monsieur!" murmured the principal of the college, endeavouring to catch hold of Billot's hand through the bars of the gate.

"And, above all, take special care of Sébastien; keep him safe," said the latter.

"Keep me! I say, on the contrary, that I will not be kept here!" cried the boy, livid with anger, and struggling with the college servants, who were dragging him away.

"Let me in," said Billot. "I will engage to quiet him."

The crowd made way for him to pass; the farmer dragged Pitou after him, and entered the courtyard of the college.

Already three or four of the French Guards, and about ten men, placed themselves as sentinels at the gate, and prevented the egress of the young insurgents.

Billot went straight up to young Sébastien, and taking between his huge and horny palms the small white hands of the child, —

"Sébastien," he said, "do you not recognise me?"

"No."

"I am old Billot, your father's farmer."

"I know you now, monsieur."

"And this lad," rejoined Billot, pointing to his companion, "do you know him?"

"Ange Pitou," said the boy.

"Yes, Sébastien; it is I, — it is I."

And Pitou, weeping with joy, threw his arms round the neck of his foster brother and former schoolfellow.

"Well," said the boy, whose brow still remained scowling, "what is now to be done?"

"What?" cried Billot. "Why, if they have taken your father from you, I will restore him to you. Do you understand?"

"You?"

"Yes, I, — I, and all those who are out yonder with me. What the devil! Yesterday we had to deal with the Austrians, and we saw their cartridge-boxes."

"In proof of which, I have one of them," said Pitou.

"Shall we not release his father?" cried Billot, addressing the crowd.

"Yes! yes!" roared the crowd; "we will release him."
Sébastien shook his head.

"My father is in the Bastile," said he, in a despairing tone.

"And what then?" cried Billot.

"The Bastile cannot be taken," replied the child.

"Then what was it you wished to do, if such is your conviction?"

"I wished to go to the open space before the castle. There will be fighting there, and my father might have seen me through the bars of his window."

"Impossible!"

"Impossible? And why should I not do so? One day, when I was walking out with all the boys here, I saw the head of a prisoner. If I could have seen my father as I saw that prisoner, I should have recognised him, and I would have called out to him, 'Do not be unhappy, father, I love you!'"

"And if the soldiers of the Bastile should have killed you?"

"Well, then, they would have killed me under the eyes of my father."

"The death of all the devils!" exclaimed Billot. "You are a wicked lad to think of getting yourself killed in your father's sight, and make him die of grief in a cage,—he who has only you in the world, he who loves you so tenderly! Decidedly, you have a bad heart, Gilbert."

And the farmer pushed the boy from him.

"Yes, yes, a wicked heart!" howled Pitou, bursting into tears.

Sébastien did not reply.

And while he was meditating in gloomy silence, Billot was admiring his beautifully pale face, his flashing eyes, his ironical, expressive mouth, his well-shaped nose, and his strongly developed chin, — all of which gave testimony at once of his nobility of soul and nobility of race.

"You say that your father is in the Bastile," said the farmer, at length breaking the silence.

"Yes."

"And for what?"

"Because my father is the friend of Lafayette and Washington; because my father has fought with his sword for the independence of America, and with his pen for the liberty of France; because my father is well known in both worlds as the detester of tyranny; because he has called down curses on the Bastile, in which so many have suffered; and therefore have they sent him there!"

"And when was this?"

"Six days ago."

"And where did they arrest him?"

"At Havre, where he had just landed."

"How do you know all this?"

"I have received a letter from him."

"Dated from Havre?"

"Yes."

"And it was at Havre itself that he was arrested?"

"It was at Lillebonne."

"Come, now, child, do not feel angry with me, but give me all the particulars that you know. I swear to you that I will either leave my bones on the Place de la Bastile, or you shall see your father again."

Sébastien looked at the farmer, and seeing that he spoke from his heart, his angry feelings subsided.

"Well, then," said he, "at Lillebonne he had time to write in a book with a pencil these words:—

"Sébastien,— I have been arrested, and they are taking me to the Bastile. Be patient, and study diligently. Lillebonne, 7th July, 1789.

"P. S.— I am arrested in the cause of Liberty. I have a son in the College Louis-le-Grand, at Paris. The person who shall find this book is entreated, in the name of humanity, to get it conveyed to my son. His name is Sébastien Gilbert."

"And this book?" inquired Billot, palpitating with emotion.

"He put a piece of gold into this book, tied a cord round it, and threw it out of the window."

"And —"

"The curate of the place found it, and chose from among his parishioners a robust young man, to whom he said: —

"Leave twelve francs with your family, who are without bread, and with the other twelve go to Paris; carry this book to a poor boy whose father has just been arrested because he has too great a love for the people."

"The young man arrived here yesterday afternoon, and delivered to me my father's book. And this is the way I learned how my father had been arrested."

"Come, come," cried Billot, "this reconciles me somewhat with the priests. Unfortunately, they are not all like this one. And this worthy young man, — what has become of him?"

"He set off to return home last night; he hoped to carry back with him to his family five francs out of the twelve he had brought with him."

"Admirable! admirable!" exclaimed Pitou, weeping for joy. "Oh! the people have good feelings. Go on, Gilbert!"

"Why, now you know all."

"Yes."

"You promised me, if I would tell you all, that you would bring back my father to me. I have told you all; now remember your promise."

"I told you that I would save him, or I would be killed in the attempt. That is true."

"And now show me the book," said Billot.

"Here it is," said the boy, taking from his pocket a volume of the "Contrat Social."

"And where is your father's handwriting?"

"Here," replied the boy, pointing to what the doctor had written.

The farmer kissed the written characters.

"And now," said he, "tranquillise yourself. I am going to seek your father in the Bastile."

"Unhappy man!" cried the principal of the college, seizing Billot's hands; "how can you obtain access to a prisoner of state?"

"Zounds! by taking the Bastile!"

Some of the French Guards began to laugh. In a few moments the laugh had become general.

"Why," said Billot, casting around him a glance flashing with anger, "what, then, is in the Bastile, if you please?"

"Stone," said a soldier.

"Iron," said another.

"And fire," said a third. "Take care, my worthy man; you may burn your fingers."

"Yes, yes; you may burn yourself," reiterated the crowd, with horror.

"Ah, Parisians!" exclaimed the farmer, "you have pickaxes, and you are afraid of stone! Ah! you have lead, and you fear iron! You have gunpowder, and you are afraid of fire! Parisians cowards! Parisians poltroons! Parisians machines for slavery! A thousand demons! where is the man of heart who will go with me and Pitou to take the king's Bastile? My name is Billot, a farmer of the Isle de France. Forward!"

Billot had raised himself to the very climax of audacity.

The crowd, rendered enthusiastic by his address, and trembling with excitement, pressed around him, crying "To the Bastile!"

Sébastien endeavoured to cling to Billot, and the latter gently pushed him back.

"Child," said he, "what is the last word your father wrote to you?"

"Work," replied Sébastien.

"Well, then, *work* here. We are going to *work* down yonder; only our work is called destroying and killing."

The young man did not utter a word in reply; he hid his

face with both hands, without even pressing the hand of Pitou, who embraced him; and he fell into such violent convulsions, that he was immediately carried into the infirmary attached to the college.

“To the Bastile!” cried Billot.

“To the Bastile!” cried Pitou.

“To the Bastile!” shouted the crowd.

And they immediately commenced their march towards the Bastile.

CHAPTER XIII.

THE KING IS SO GOOD! THE QUEEN IS SO GOOD!

AND now we request our readers to allow us to give them an insight into the principal political events that had occurred since the period at which we abandoned the court of France.

Those who know the history of that period, or those whom dry, plain history may alarm, can skip over this chapter, and pass on to the next one, which completely dovetails in with Chapter XII.; the one we are now writing being intended for those very precise and exacting spirits who are determined to be informed on every point.

During the last year or two something unheard of, unknown, something emanating from the past, and looking towards the future, was threatening and growling in the air.

It was the Revolution.

Voltaire had raised himself for a moment, while in his last agony, and, leaning upon his elbow in his death-bed, he had seen shining, even amidst the darkness in which he was about to sleep forever, the brilliant lightnings of this dawn.

When Anne of Austria assumed the regency of France, says Cardinal de Retz, there was but one saying in every mouth, "*The queen is so good!*"

One day Madame de Pompadour's physician, Quesnoy, who had an apartment in her house, saw Louis XV. coming in. A feeling altogether unconnected with respect agitated him so much that he trembled and turned pale.

"What is the matter with you?" said Madame du Hausset to him.

"The matter is," replied Quesnoy, "that every time I see the king I say to myself, 'There is a man who, if he should feel so inclined, can have my head cut off.'"

"Oh, there's no danger of that," rejoined Madame du Hausset. "*The king is so good!*"

It is with these two phrases — "The king is so good!" "The queen is so good!" — that the French Revolution was effected.

When Louis XV. died, France breathed again. The country was delivered at the same moment from the king, the Pompadours, the Dubarrys, and the Parc-aux-Cerfs.

The pleasures of Louis XV. had cost the nation very dear. In them alone were expended three millions of livres a year.

Fortunately, after him came a king who was young, moral, philanthropic, almost philosophical.

A king who, like the Emile of Jean Jacques Rousseau, had studied a trade, or rather, we should say, three trades.

He was a locksmith, a watchmaker, and a mechanician.

Being alarmed at the abyss over which he was suspended, the king began by refusing all favours that were asked of him. The courtiers trembled. Fortunately, there was one circumstance which reassured them, — it was not the king who refused, but Turgot, — it was that the queen was not yet in reality a queen, and consequently could not have that influence to-day which she might acquire to-morrow.

At last, towards the year 1777, she acquired that influence which had been so long desired. The queen became a mother. The king, who was already so good a king, so good a husband, could now also prove himself a good father.

How could anything be now refused to her who had given an heir to the crown?

And besides, that was not all; the king was also a good brother. The anecdote is well known of Beaumarchais being sacrificed to the Count de Provence, and yet the king did not like the Count de Provence, who was a pedant.

But, to make up for this, he was very fond of his younger brother, the Count d'Artois, the type of French wit, elegance, and nobleness.

He loved him so much that, if he sometimes refused the queen any favour she might have asked of him, the Count d'Artois had only to add his solicitations to those of the queen, and the king had no longer the firmness to refuse.

It was, in fact, the reign of amiable men. Monsieur de Calonne, one of the most amiable men in the whole world, was comptroller-general. It was Calonne who said to the queen, —

“Madame, if it is possible, it is done : and if it is impossible, it shall be done.”

From the very day on which this charming reply was circulated in all the drawing-rooms of Paris and Versailles, the red book, which every one had thought closed forever, was reopened.

The queen buys Saint Cloud.

The king buys Rambouillet.

It is no longer the king who has lady favourites, it is the queen. Mesdames Diana and Jules de Polignac cost as much to France as La Pompadour and La Dubarry.

The queen is so good !

A reduction is proposed in the salaries of the high officers of the court. Some of them make up their minds to it. But one of the most habitual frequenters of the palace obstinately refuses to submit to this reduction ; it is Monsieur de Coigny. He meets the king in one of the corridors, a terrible scene occurs, the king runs away, and in the evening says laughingly, —

“Upon my word, I believe, if I had not yielded, Coigny would have beaten me.”

The king is so good !

And then the fate of a kingdom sometimes depends upon a very trivial circumstance, the spur of a page, for instance.

Louis XV. dies ; who is to succeed Monsieur d'Aiguillon ?

The king, Louis XVI., is for Machaut. Machaut is one of the ministers who had sustained the already tottering throne. Mesdames, that is to say, the king's aunts, are for Monsieur de Maurepas, who is so amusing, and who writes such pretty songs. He wrote three volumes of them at Pontchartrain, which he called his memoirs.

All this is a steeple-chase affair. The question was as to who should arrive first. The king and queen at Arnouville or Mesdames at Pontchartrain.

The king has the power in his own hands ; the chances are therefore in his favour.

He hastens to write : —

“Set out, the very moment you receive this, for Paris ; I am waiting for you.”

He slips his despatch into an envelope, and on the envelope he writes : —

“Monsieur le Comte de Machaut, at Arnouville.”

A page of the king's stables is sent for ; the royal missive is put into his hands, and he is ordered to mount a horse, and to go to Arnouville full speed.

And now that the page is despatched, the king can receive Mesdames.

Mesdames, the same whom the king their father, as has been seen in “Memoirs of a Physician,” called Locque, Chiffe, and Graille, three names eminently aristocratic, — Mesdames are waiting at a door opposite to that by which the page goes out, until he shall have left the room.

The page once gone out, Mesdames may go in.

They go in, entreat the king in favour of M. Maurepas, — all this is a mere question of time, — the king does not like to refuse Mesdames anything, — *the king is so good*.

He will accede to their request when the page shall have got so far on his journey that no one can come up with him.

He contested the point with Mesdames, his eyes fixed on the time-piece. Half an hour will be sufficient for him.

The time-piece will not deceive him. It is the time-piece which he himself regulates.

Twenty minutes have elapsed, and he yields.

"Let the page be overtaken," said he, "and all shall be as you please."

Mesdames rush out of the room; they will despatch a man on horseback; he shall kill a horse, two horses, six horses, but the page must be overtaken.

All these determinations are unnecessary, not a single horse will be killed.

In going down the staircase one of the page's spurs struck against one of the stone steps, and broke short off. How could any one go at full speed with only one spur?

Besides, the Chevalier d'Abzac is the chief of the great stable, and he would not allow a courier to mount his horse—he whose duty it was to inspect the couriers—if the courier was about to set out in a manner that would not do honour to the royal stables.

The page therefore could not set out without having both his spurs.

The result of all this was, that instead of overtaking the page on the road to Arnouville, galloping at full speed, he was overtaken before he had left the courtyard of the palace.

He was already in the saddle, and was about to depart in the most irreproachable good order.

The despatch is taken from him, the text of the missive is left unchanged, for it was as good for the one as the other. Only, instead of writing the address, "To Monsieur de Machaut, at Arnouville," Mesdames wrote, "To Monsieur le Comte de Maurepas, at Pontchartrain."

The honour of the royal stable is saved, but the monarchy is lost.

With Maurepas and Calonne, everything goes on marvelously well; the one sings, the other plays; but besides the courtiers, there are the receivers-general, who also have their functions to perform.

Louis XIV. began his reign by ordering two receivers-general to be hanged, and with the advice of Colbert; after which he took La Vallière for his mistress and built Versailles. La Vallière cost him nothing.

But Versailles, in which he wished to lodge her, cost him a round sum.

Then, in 1685, under the pretext that they were Protestants, he drove a million of industrious men from France.

And thus, in 1707, still under the *great* king, Boisguilbert said, speaking of 1698, —

“Things still went on well in those days; there was yet some oil in the lamp. But now all has come to an end for want of aliment.”

What could be said eighty years afterwards, when the Dubarrys, the Polignacs, had taken their fill? After having made the people sweat water, they would make them sweat blood. That was all.

And all this in so delightful and polite a manner.

In former days the contractors of the public revenue were harsh, brutal, and cold as the prison gates into which they cast their victims.

But in these days they are philanthropists: with one hand they despoil the people, it is true; but with the other they build hospitals for them.

One of my friends, a great financier, has assured me that out of one hundred and twenty millions which the town dues bring in the contractors managed to keep seventy millions for themselves.

It happened that at a meeting where the state of expenses was demanded, a counsellor, playing upon the word, said, —

“It is not any particular state that we require; what we want are the States General.”

The sparks fell upon gunpowder, the powder ignited and caused a general conflagration.

Every one repeated the saying of the counsellor, and the States General were loudly called for.

The court fixed the opening of the States General for the 1st of May, 1789.

On the 24th of August, 1788, Monsieur de Brienne withdrew from public affairs. He was another who had managed the financial affairs with tolerable recklessness.

But on withdrawing he at least gave good counsel; he advised that Necker should be recalled.

Necker resumed the administration of affairs, and all again breathed confidence.

Notwithstanding this, the great question of the three orders was discussed throughout France.

Sieyès published his famous pamphlets upon the Tiers Etat.¹

Dauphiny, the States of which province still met in spite of all the court could do, decided that the representations of the Tiers Etat should be on an equality with that of the nobility and clergy.

The assembly of the notables was reconstructed.

This assembly lasted thirty-six days, that is to say, from the 6th of November to the 8th of December, 1788.

On this occasion the elements performed their part. When the whip of kings does not suffice, the whip of the Creator whistles in the air and compels the people to move onwards.

Winter came, accompanied by famine. Hunger and cold opened the gates of 1789.

Paris was filled with troops; its streets with patrols.

Two or three times the muskets of the soldiers were loaded in the presence of the people, who were dying with hunger.

And then, the muskets being loaded and the moment having arrived for using them, they did not use them at all.

One morning, the 28th of April, five days before the opening of the States General, a name was circulated among the crowd.

¹ The Third Order, or Third Estate.

This name was accompanied by maledictions, and the more vituperative because this name was that of a workman who had become rich.

Réveillon, as was then asserted — Réveillon, the director of the celebrated paper manufactory of the Faubourg Saint-Antoine — Réveillon had said that the wages of workmen ought to be reduced to fifteen sous a day.

And this was true.

It was also said that the court was about to decorate him with the black riband, — that is to say with the Order of Saint-Michel.

But this was an absurdity.

There is always some absurd rumour in popular commotions. And it is remarkable that it is also by this rumour that they increase their numbers, that they recruit, and at last become a revolution.

The crowd makes an effigy, baptizes it with the name of RÉVEILLON, decorates it with the black riband, sets fire to it before Réveillon's own door, and then proceeds to the square before the Hôtel de Ville, where it completes the burning of the effigy before the eyes of the municipal authorities, who see it burning.

Impunity emboldens the crowd, who give notice that, after having done justice on the effigy, they will the following day do justice on the real person of the offender.

This was a challenge in due form addressed to the public authorities.

The authorities sent thirty of the French Guards, and even then it was not the authorities who sent them, but their colonel, Monsieur de Biron.

These thirty French Guards were merely witnesses of this great duel, which they could not prevent. They looked on while the mob was pillaging the manufactory, throwing the furniture out of the windows, breaking everything, burning everything. Amid all this hubbub, five hundred louis in gold were stolen.

They drank the wine in the cellars, and when there was

no more wine, they drank the colours of the manufactory, which they took for wine.

The whole of the day of the 27th was employed in effecting this villanous spoliation.

A reinforcement was sent to the thirty men. It consisted of several companies of the French Guards, who in the first place fired blank cartridges, then balls. Towards evening there came to the support of the Guards part of the Swiss regiment of Monsieur de Bezenval.

The Swiss never make a jest of matters connected with revolution.

The Swiss forgot to take the balls out of their cartridges, and as the Swiss are naturally sportsmen and good marksmen too, about twenty of the pillagers remained upon the pavement.

Some of them had about them a portion of the five hundred louis which we have mentioned, and which from the secretary of Réveillon had passed into the pockets of the pillagers, and from the pockets of the pillagers into those of the Swiss Guards.

Bezenval had done all this; he had done it out of his own head, as the vulgar saying has it.

The king did not thank him for what he had done, nor did he blame him for it.

Now, when the king does not thank, the king blames.

The Parliament opened an inquiry.

The king closed it.

The king was so good!

Who it was that had stirred on the people to do this no one could tell.

Has it not been often seen, during the great heats of summer, that conflagrations have taken place without any apparent cause?

The Duke of Orleans was accused of having excited this disturbance.

The accusation was absurd, and it fell to the ground.

On the 29th, Paris was perfectly tranquil, or at least appeared to be so.

The 4th of May arrived. The king and the queen went in procession with the whole court to the cathedral of Notre Dame to hear "Veni Creator."

There were great shouts of "Long live the king!" and, above all, of "Long live the queen!"

The queen was so good!

This was the last day of peace.

The next day the shouts of "Long live the queen!" were not so frequent, but the mob cried more frequently, "Long live the Duke of Orleans!"

These cries wounded her feelings much, poor woman! — she who detested the duke to such a degree that she said he was a coward.

As if there had ever been a coward in the Orleans family, from Monsieur, who gained the battle of Cassel, down to the Duke of Chartres, who contributed to the gaining of those at Jemmapes and Valmy!

It went so far that the poor woman was near fainting. She was supported, her head leaning on her shoulder.

Madame Campan relates this incident in her memoirs.

But this reclining head raised itself up haughty and disdainful. Those who saw the expression of those features were at once cured, and forever, of using the expression, —

The queen is so good!

There exist three portraits of the queen; one painted in 1776, another in 1784, and a third in 1788.

I have seen all three of them. See them in your turn! If ever these three portraits are placed in the same gallery, the history of Marie Antoinette can be read in those three portraits.¹

The meeting of the three orders, which was to have produced a general pacification, proved a declaration of war.

"Three orders," said Sieyès; "no, three nations."

On the 3d of May, the eve of the Mass of the Holy Ghost, the king received the deputies at Versailles.

¹ The three portraits are at Versailles.

Some persons counselled him to substitute cordiality for etiquette.

The king would not listen to anything.

He in the first place received the clergy.

After them, the nobility.

At last, the Tiers Etat.

The Third had been waiting a long time.

The Third murmured.

In the assemblies of former times the Tiers Etat pronounced their discourses on their knees.

There was no possibility of inducing the president of the Tiers Etat to go down on his knees.

It was decided that the Tiers Etat should not pronounce an oration.

In the sittings of the 5th the king put on his hat.

The nobility put on their hats.

The Tiers Etat were about to put on their hats also, but the king then took off his. He preferred holding it in his hand to seeing the Tiers Etat covered in his presence.

On Wednesday, the 10th of June, Sieyès entered the Assembly. He found it almost entirely composed of the Tiers Etat.

The clergy and the nobility were assembled elsewhere.

"Let us cut the cable," said Sieyès. "It is now time."

And Sieyès proposed that the clergy and the nobility should be summoned to attend within an hour from that time at the latest.

In case of non-appearance, default should be pronounced against the absent.

A German and Swiss army surrounded Versailles; a battery of artillery was pointed against the Assembly.

Sieyès saw nothing of all this; he saw the people, who were starving; but the Third, Sieyès was told, could not of itself form the States General.

"So much the better," replied Sieyès; "it will form the National Assembly."

The absent did not present themselves; the proposal of

Sieyès was adopted; the Tiers Etat calls itself the NATIONAL ASSEMBLY by a majority of 400 votes.

On the 19th of June, the king orders the building in which the National Assembly held their meetings to be closed.

But the king, in order to accomplish such a *coup d'état*, needed some pretext.

The hall is closed for the purpose of making preparations for a royal sitting, which was to take place on the following Monday.

On the 20th of June, at seven in the morning, the President of the National Assembly is informed that there will be no meeting on that day.

At eight o'clock he presents himself at the door of the hall, with a great number of the deputies.

The doors are closed, and sentinels are guarding the doors.

The rain is falling.

They wish to break open the doors.

The sentinels had received their orders, and they present their bayonets.

One of the deputies proposes that they should meet at the Place d'Armes.

Another, that it should be at Marly.

Guillotin proposes the Jeu de Paume.¹

Guillotin!

What a strange thing that it should be Guillotin, whose name, by adding an *e* to it, should become so celebrated four years afterwards! How strange that it should be Guillotin who proposed the Jeu de Paume.

The Jeu de Paume, unfurnished, dilapidated, open to the four winds of heaven!

To this great demonstration the king replies by the royal word, *VETO*!

Monsieur de Brézé is sent to the rebels to order them to disperse.

¹ The tennis court.

"We are here by the will of the people," said Mirabeau, "and we will not leave this place but with bayonets pointed at our breasts."

And not, as it has been asserted that he said, "*by the force of bayonets.*" Why is it that there is always behind great men some paltry rhetorician who spoils his sayings, under pretext of arranging them?

Why was there such a rhetorician behind Mirabeau at the Jeu de Paume?

And behind Cambronne at Waterloo?

The reply was at once reported to the king.

He walked about for some time, with the air of a man who was suffering from ennui.

"They will not go away?" said he.

"No, sire."

"Well, then, leave them where they are."

As is here shown, royalty was already bending beneath the hand of the people, and bending very low.

From the 21st of June to the 12th of July, all appeared tolerably calm, but it was that species of calm which so frequently precedes the tempest.

It was like the uneasy dream of an uneasy slumber.

On the 11th, the king formed a resolution, urged to it by the queen, the Count d'Artois, the Polignacs, — in fact, the whole of the *Camarilla* of Versailles; in short, he dismissed Necker.

On the 12th, this intelligence reached Paris.

The effect which it produced has already been seen. On the evening of the 13th, Billot arrived just in time to see the barriers burning.

On the 13th, in the evening, Paris was defending itself.

On the 14th, in the morning, Paris was ready to attack.

On the morning of the 14th, Billot cried, "To the Bastille!" and three thousand men, imitating Billot, reiterated the same cry, which was about to become that of the whole population of Paris.

The reason was, that there had existed during five cen-

turies a monument weighing heavily upon the breast of France, like the infernal rock upon the shoulders of Sisyphus.

Only that, less confiding than the Titan in his strength, France had never attempted to throw it off.

This monument, the seal of feudality imprinted on the forehead of Paris, was the Bastile.

The king was too good, as Madame du Hausset had said, to have a head cut off.

But the king sent people to the Bastile.

When once a man became acquainted with the Bastile; by order of the king, that man was forgotten, sequestered, interred, annihilated.

He remained there until the king remembered him; and kings have so many new things occurring around them every day, and of which they are obliged to think, that they often forget to think of old matters.

Moreover, in France, there was not only one Bastile, there were twenty other Bastiles, which were called Fort l'Evêque, Saint-Lazare, the Châtelet, the Conciergerie, Vincennes, the Castle of La Roche, the Castle of If, the Isles of Sainte-Marguerite, Pignerolles, etc.

Only the fortress at the Gate Saint-Antoine was called *the Bastile*, as Rome was called *the city*.

It was the Bastile *par excellence* alone; it was of more importance than all the others.

During nearly a whole century, the governorship of the Bastile had continued in one and the same family.

The grandfather of this elect race was Monsieur de Châteauneuf; his son Lavrillière succeeded him, who in turn was succeeded by his grandson, Saint-Florentin. The dynasty became extinct in 1777.

During this triple reign, the greater part of which passed during the reign of Louis XV., it would be impossible to state the number of *lettres de cachet*.¹ Saint-Florentin alone received more than fifty thousand.

¹ Secret orders of imprisonment.

The *lettres de cachet* were a great source of revenue.

They were sold to fathers who wished to get rid of their sons.

They were sold to women who wished to get rid of their husbands.

The prettier the wives were, the less did the *lettre de cachet* cost them.

It then became, between them and the minister, an exchange of polite attentions, and that was all.

Since the end of the reign of Louis XIV., all the state prisons, and particularly the Bastille, were in the hands of the Jesuits.

Among the prisoners, it will be recollected, the following were of the greatest note:—

The Iron Mask, Lauzun, Latude.

The Jesuits were connoisseurs; for greater security they confessed the prisoners.

For greater security still, the prisoners were buried under supposititious names.

The Iron Mask, it will be remembered, was buried under the name of Marchialy; he had remained forty-five years in prison.

Lauzun remained there fourteen years.

Latude, thirty years.

But, at all events, the Iron Mask and Lauzun had committed heinous crimes.

The Iron Mask, whether brother or not of Louis XIV., it is asserted, resembled King Louis XIV. so strongly that it was almost impossible to distinguish the one from the other.

It is exceedingly imprudent to dare to resemble a king.

Lauzun had been very near marrying, or did actually marry, the Grande Mademoiselle.

It is exceedingly imprudent to dare to marry the niece of King Louis XIII., the granddaughter of Henry IV.

But Latude, poor devil, what had he done?

He had dared to fall in love with Mademoiselle Poisson, Dame de Pompadour, the king's mistress.

He had written a note to her.

This note, which a respectable woman would have sent back to the man who wrote it, was handed by Madame de Pompadour to Monsieur de Sartines, the lieutenant-general of police.

And Latude, arrested, fugitive, taken and retaken, remained thirty years locked up in the Bastile, the Castle of Vincennes, and Bicêtre.

It was not, therefore, without reason that the Bastile was abhorred.

The people hated it as if it were a living thing; they had formed of it a gigantic chimera,—one of those monsters like those of Gévaudan, who pitilessly devour the human species.

The grief of poor Sébastien Gilbert will therefore be fully comprehended, when he was informed that his father was in the Bastile.

Billot's conviction will also be understood, that the doctor would never be released from his prison unless he was released by force.

The frenetic impulse of the people will be also understood when Billot vociferated, "To the Bastile!"

Only that it was a senseless idea, as the soldiers had remarked, that the Bastile could be taken.

The Bastile had provisions, a garrison, artillery.

The Bastile had walls which were fifteen feet thick at their summit, and forty at their base.

The Bastile had a governor, whose name was De Launay, who had stored thirty thousand pounds of gunpowder in his cellars, and who had sworn, in case of being surprised by a *coup de main*, to blow up the Bastile, and with it half the Faubourg Saint-Antoine.

CHAPTER XIV.

THE THREE POWERS OF FRANCE.

BILLOT still walked on, but it was no longer he who shouted. The crowd, delighted with his martial air, recognised in this man one of their own class; commenting on his words and action, they followed him, still increasing like the waves of the incoming tide.

Behind Billot, when he issued from the narrow streets and came upon the Quay Saint-Michel, marched more than three thousand men, armed with cutlasses, or pikes, or guns.

They all cried, "To the Bastile! to the Bastile!"

Billot counselled with his own thoughts. The reflections which we have made at the close of the last chapter presented themselves to his mind, and by degrees all the fumes of his feverish excitement evaporated.

Then he saw clearly into his own mind.

The enterprise was sublime, but insensate. This was easily to be understood from the affrighted and ironical countenances, on which were reflected the impressions produced by the cry of "To the Bastile."

But nevertheless he was only the more strengthened in his resolution.

He could not, however, but comprehend that he was responsible to mothers, wives, and children for the lives of the men who were following him, and he felt bound to use every possible precaution.

Billot, therefore, began by leading his little army on to the square in front of the Hôtel de Ville.¹

¹ Town House, or City Hall.

There he appointed his lieutenant and other officers — watch-dogs, to restrain the flock.

"Let us see," thought Billot, "there is a power in France, — there are even two, — there are even three.

"Let us consult."

He entered the Hôtel de Ville, asking who was the chief of the municipality.

He was told it was the Provost of the Merchants, the Mayor of Paris, Monsieur de Flesselles.

"Ah! ah!" cried he, with a dissatisfied air, "Monsieur *de* Flesselles, a noble, — that is to say, an enemy of the people."

"Why, no," they replied to him; "he is a man of talent."

Billot ascended the staircase of the Hôtel de Ville.

In the antechamber he met an usher.

"I wish to speak with Monsieur de Flesselles," said he, perceiving that the usher was approaching him to ask him what he wanted.

"Impossible!" replied the usher; "he is now occupied in drawing up the lists of a militia force which the city is about to organise."

"That falls out marvellously well," observed Billot, "for I also am organising a militia, and, as I have already three thousand men enlisted, I am as good as Monsieur de Flesselles, who has not a single soldier yet afoot. Enable me, therefore, to speak with Monsieur de Flesselles, and that instantly. Oh! look out of the window, if you will."

The usher had in fact cast a rapid glance upon the quays, and had perceived Billot's men. He therefore hastened to inform the mayor, to whom he showed the three thousand men in question, as a postscript to his message.

This inspired the provost with a sort of respect for the person who wished to see him; he left the council-room and went into the antechamber, looking about for his visitor.

He perceived Billot, guessed that he was the person, and smiled.

"It was you who were asking for me, was it not?" said he.

"You are Monsieur de Flesselles, Provost of the Merchants, I believe?" replied Billot.

"Yes, monsieur. In what way can I be of service to you? Only speak quickly, for my mind is much occupied."

"Good Monsieur Provost," continued Billot, "how many powers are there in France?"

"Why, that is as people may choose to understand it, my dear monsieur," replied Flesselles.

"Say it, then, as you yourself understand it."

"Were you to consult Monsieur Bailly, he would tell you there is but one,—the National Assembly; if you consult Monsieur de Dreux-Brézé, he would also tell you there is but one,—the king."

"And you, Monsieur Provost,—of these two opinions which is yours?"

"My own opinion, and above all at the present moment, is that there is but one."

"The assembly or the king?" demanded Billot.

"Neither the one nor the other,—it is the nation," replied Flesselles, playing with the frill of his shirt.

"Ah! ah! the nation!" cried the farmer.

"Yes; that is to say, those gentlemen who are waiting down yonder on the quay with knives and roasting spits. The nation,—by that I mean everybody."

"You may, perhaps, be right, Monsieur de Flesselles," replied Billot, "and they were not wrong in telling me that you are a man of talent."

De Flesselles bowed.

"To which of these three powers do you think of appealing, monsieur?" asked Flesselles.

"Upon my faith," said Billot, "I believe that, when one has anything very important to ask, a man had better address himself at once to God, and not to his saints."

"Which means to say that you are about to address yourself to the king."

"I am inclined to do so."

"Would it be indiscreet to inquire what it is you think of asking of the king?"

"The liberation of Doctor Gilbert, who is in the Bastile."

"Doctor Gilbert?" solemnly asked Monsieur de Flesselles; "he is a writer of pamphlets, is he not?"

"Say a philosopher, monsieur."

"That is one and the same thing, my dear Monsieur Billot. I think you stand but a poor chance of obtaining what you desire from the king."

"And why so?"

"In the first place, because, if the king sent Doctor Gilbert to the Bastile, he must have had reasons for so doing."

"T is well," replied Billot; "he shall give me his reasons on the subject, and I will give him mine."

"My dear Monsieur Billot, the king is just now very busy, and he would not even receive you."

"Oh! if he does not receive me, I shall find some means of getting in without his permission."

"Yes; and when you have once got in, you will find there Monsieur de Dreux-Brézé, who will have you shoved out of doors."

"Who will have me shoved out of doors?"

"Yes; he wished to do that to the National Assembly altogether. It is true that he did not succeed; but that is a stronger reason for his being in a furious rage, and taking his revenge on you."

"Very well; then I will apply to the Assembly."

"The road to Versailles is intercepted."

"I will go there with my three thousand men."

"Take care, my dear monsieur. You would find on your road some four or five thousand Swiss soldiers, and two or three thousand Austrians, who would make only a mouthful of you and your three thousand men. In the twinkling of an eye you would be swallowed."

"Ah, the devil! What ought I to do, then?"

"Do what you please; but do me the service to take away your three thousand men, who are beating the pavement yonder with their pikes, and who are smoking. There are seven or eight thousand pounds of powder in our cellars here. A single spark might blow us all up."

"In that case, I think, I will neither address myself to the king nor to the National Assembly. I will address myself to the nation, and we will take the Bastile."

"And with what?"

"With the eight thousand pounds of powder that you are going to give me, Monsieur Provost."

"Ah, really!" said Flesselles, in a jeering tone.

"It is precisely as I say, monsieur. The keys of the cellars, if you please."

"Hey! you are jesting, sure!" cried the provost.

"No, monsieur, I am not jesting," said Billot.

And seizing Flesselles by the collar of his coat with both hands, "The keys!" he cried, "or I call up my men."

Flesselles turned as pale as death. His lips and his teeth were closed convulsively; but when he spoke, his voice was in no way agitated, and he did not even change the ironical tone he had assumed.

"In fact, monsieur," said he, "you are doing me a great service by relieving me from the charge of this powder. I will therefore order the keys to be delivered to you, as you desire. Only please not to forget that I am your first magistrate, and that if you have the misfortune to conduct yourself towards me before others in the way you have done when alone with me, an hour afterwards you would be hanged by the town guards. You insist on having this powder?"

"I insist," replied Billot.

"And you will distribute it yourself?"

"Myself."

"And when?"

"This very moment."

"Your pardon. Let us understand each other. I have business which will detain me here about a quarter of an hour, and should rather like, if it is the same to you, that the distribution should not be commenced until I have left the place. It has been predicted to me that I shall die a violent death; but I acknowledge that I have a very decided repugnance to being blown into the air."

"Be it so; in a quarter of an hour, then. But now, in my turn, I have a request to make."

"What is it?"

"Let us both go close up to that window."

"For what purpose?"

"I wish to make you popular."

"I am greatly obliged; but in what manner?"

"You shall see."

Billot took the provost to the window, which was open, and called out to his friends in the square below.

"My friends," said he, "you still wish to take the Bastille, do you not?"

"Yes! yes! yes!" shouted three or four thousand voices.

"But you want gunpowder, do you not?"

"Yes! Gunpowder! gunpowder!"

"Well, then, here is his honour the provost, who is willing to give you all he has in the cellars of the Hôtel de Ville. Thank him for it, my friends."

"Long live the Provost of the Merchants! Long live Monsieur de Flesselles!" shouted the whole crowd.

"Thanks, my friends; thanks for myself, — thanks for him," cried Billot.

Then, turning towards the provost, —

"And now, monsieur," said Billot, "it is no longer necessary that I should take you by the collar, while here alone with you, or before all the world; for if you do not give me the gunpowder, the nation, as you call it, the nation will tear you to pieces."

"Here are the keys, monsieur," said the provost. "You

have so persuasive a mode of asking, that it does not even admit a refusal."

"What you say really encourages me," said Billot, who appeared to be meditating some other project.

"Ah, the deuce! Can you have anything else to ask of me?"

"Yes. Are you acquainted with the Governor of the Bastile?"

"Monsieur de Launay?"

"I do not know what his name is."

"His name is De Launay."

"Be it so. Well, do you know Monsieur de Launay?"

"He is a friend of mine."

"In that case, you must desire that no misfortune should happen to him."

"In fact, I should desire it."

"Well, then, the way to prevent any misfortune happening to him is, that he should surrender the Bastile to me, or at all events liberate the doctor."

"You do not imagine, surely, that I should have influence enough with him to induce him to surrender to you either his prisoner or his fortress, do you?"

"That is my affair. All that I ask is, that you will give me an introduction to him."

"My dear Monsieur Billot, I forewarn you that, if you go into the Bastile, you will go into it alone."

"Very well."

"I forewarn you, moreover, that, if you enter it alone, you will perhaps not get out again."

"Marvellously well."

"Then I will give you your permission to go into the Bastile."

"I will wait for it."

"But it will be on still another condition."

"What is that?"

"It is that you will not come to me again to-morrow, and ask me for a passport to the moon. I forewarn you that I am not acquainted with any one in those regions."

"Flesselles! Flesselles!" said a hollow and threatening voice from behind the Provost of the Merchants, "if you continue to wear two faces,—the one which laughs with the aristocrats, the other which smiles upon the people,—you will perhaps receive, between this and to-morrow morning, a passport for a world from which no one returns."

The provost turned round, shuddering.

"Who is it that speaks thus?" said he.

"'T is I,—Marat!"

"Marat, the philosopher! Marat, the physician!" exclaimed Billot.

"Yes," replied the same voice.

"Yes,—Marat, the philosopher; Marat, the physician," repeated Flesselles; "who, in this last capacity, ought to attend to curing coughs, which would have been a sure means of now having a goodly number of patients."

"Monsieur de Flesselles," replied the lugubrious interlocutor, "this worthy citizen has asked you for a passport which will facilitate his seeing Monsieur de Launay. I would observe to you, that not only is he waiting for you, but that three thousand men are waiting for him."

"'T is well, monsieur; he shall soon have it."

Flesselles went to a table, passed one hand over his brow, and with the other, seizing a pen, he rapidly wrote several lines.

"Here is your safe conduct," said he, delivering the paper to Billot.

"Read it," said Marat.

"I cannot read," said Billot.

"Well, then, give it to me; I can read."

Billot handed the paper to Marat.

This passport was conceived in the following terms:—

"MONSIEUR GOVERNOR: We, Provost of the Merchants of the city of Paris, send to you Monsieur Billot, in order to concert with you as to the interests of the said city.

"DE FLESSELLES.

"14th July, 1789."

"Good," said Billot, "give it to me."

"You find this passport good as it is?" said Marat.

"Undoubtedly."

"Stop a minute. The provost is going to add a postscript to it, which will make it better."

And he went up to Flesselles, who had remained standing, his hand on the table, and who looked with a disdainful air at the two men with whom he was so particularly engaged, and a third one, half naked, who had just presented himself at the door, leaning upon a musketoon.

It was Pitou, who had followed Billot, and who held himself ready to obey the farmer's orders be they what they might.

"Monsieur," said Marat to Flesselles, "the postscript which you are about to add, and which will render the passport so much better, is the following."

"Say on, Monsieur Marat."

Marat placed the paper on the table, and, pointing with his finger to the place on which the provost was to write the required postscript, —

"The citizen Billot," said he, "having the character of bearer of a flag of truce, I confide his care to your honour."

Flesselles looked at Marat as if he would rather have smashed his flat face with his fist than do that which he had requested.

"Would you resist, monsieur?" demanded Marat.

"No," replied Flesselles, "for, after all, you only ask me what is strictly right."

And he wrote the postscript demanded of him.

"However, gentlemen, you will be pleased to observe this well, that I do not answer for the safety of Monsieur Billot."

"And I — I will be answerable for it," said Marat, jerking the paper out of his hands; "for your liberty is the guaranty of his liberty, — your head for the safety of his head. Here, worthy Billot," continued Marat, "here is your passport."



"Labrie!" cried Monsieur de Flesselles, — "Labrie!"

A lackey in grand livery entered the room.

"My carriage," said the provost.

"It is waiting for you, monsieur, in the courtyard."

"Let us go, then," said the provost. "There is nothing else which you desire, gentlemen?"

"No," simultaneously replied Billot and Marat.

"Am I to let them pass?" inquired Pitou.

"My friend," said Flesselles to him, "I would observe to you that you are rather too indecently attired to mount guard at my door. If you insist upon remaining here, turn your cartouche-box round in front, and set your back against the wall."

"Am I to let them pass?" Pitou repeated, with an air which indicated that he did not greatly relish the jest of which he had been the subject.

"Yes," said Billot.

Pitou made way for the provost to pass by him.

"Perhaps you were wrong in allowing that man to go," said Marat. "He would have been a good hostage to have kept. But, in any case, let him go where he will, you may feel perfectly assured that I will find him again."

"Labrie," said the Provost of the Merchants, as he was getting into his carriage, "they are going to distribute powder here. Should the Hôtel de Ville perchance blow up, I should like to be out of the way of the splinters. Let us get out of gunshot, Labrie, out of gunshot."

The carriage rattled through the gateway, and appeared upon the square, on which were growling some four or five thousand persons.

Flesselles was afraid that they might misinterpret his departure, which might be considered as a flight.

He leaned half-way out of the door.

"To the National Assembly," cried he, in a loud voice, to the coachman.

This drew upon him from the crowd a loud and continued outburst of applause.

Marat and Billot were on the balcony, and had heard the last words of Flesselles.

"My head against his," said Marat, "that he is not going to the National Assembly, but to the king."

"Would it not be well to have him stopped?" said Billot.

"No," replied Marat, with his hideous smile; "make yourself easy; however quickly he may go, we shall go still quicker than he. But now for the gunpowder."

"Yes, to the gunpowder," said Billot.

And they both went down the great staircase, followed by Pitou.

CHAPTER XV.

MONSIEUR DE LAUNAY, GOVERNOR OF THE BASTILE.

As Monsieur de Flesselles had said, there were eight thousand pounds of gunpowder in the cellars of the Hôtel de Ville.

Marat and Billot went into the first cellar with a lantern, which they suspended to a hook in the ceiling.

Pitou mounted guard at the door.

The powder was in small kegs, containing each about twenty pounds. Men were stationed upon the stairs, forming a chain which reached the square, and they at once began to send up the kegs.

There was at first a momentary confusion. It was not known whether there would be powder enough for everybody, and they all rushed forward to secure their share. But the chain formed by Billot at length succeeded in making the people wait patiently for their turn, and the distribution was effected with something like an approach to order.

Every citizen received half a pound of powder; about thirty or forty shots.

But when every one had received the powder, it was perceived that muskets were sadly deficient; there were scarcely five hundred among the whole crowd.

While the distribution was going on, a portion of this furious population who were crying out for arms went up to the rooms where the electors held their sittings. They were occupied in forming the National Guard, of which the usher had spoken to Billot.

They had just decreed that this civic militia should be composed of forty-eight thousand men. This militia but

yet existed in the decree, and they were disputing as to the general who should command it.

It was in the midst of this discussion that the people invaded the Hôtel de Ville. They had organised themselves. They only asked to march: all they required was arms.

At that moment the noise of a carriage coming into the courtyard was heard. It was the Provost of the Merchants, who had not been allowed to proceed upon his journey, although he had exhibited a mandate from the king ordering him to proceed to Versailles, and he was brought back by force to the Hôtel de Ville.

"Give us arms! give us arms!" cried the crowd, as soon as they perceived him at a distance.

"Arms!" cried he; "I have no arms; but there must be some at the Arsenal."

"To the Arsenal! to the Arsenal!" cried the crowd.

And five or six thousand men rushed on to the Quay de la Grève.

The Arsenal was empty.

They returned, with bitter lamentations, to the Hôtel de Ville.

The provost had no arms, or rather would not give them. Pressed by the people, he had the idea of sending them to the Chartreux.

The Chartreux opened its gates; they searched it in every direction, but did not find even a pocket-pistol.

During this time, Flesselles, having been informed that Billot and Marat were still in the cellars of the Hôtel de Ville, completing the distribution of the gunpowder, proposed to send a deputation to De Launay, to propose to him that he should withdraw the cannon from his ramparts, so as to be out of sight.

That which the evening before had made the crowd hoot most obstreperously was these guns, which, stretching forth their long necks, were seen beyond the turreted parapets. Flesselles hoped that, by causing them to disappear, the people would be contented by the concession, and would withdraw satisfied.

The deputation had just set forth, when the people returned in great fury.

On hearing the cries they uttered, Billot and Marat ran upstairs into the courtyard.

Flesselles, from an interior balcony, endeavoured to calm the people. He proposed a decree which should authorise the districts to manufacture fifty thousand pikes.

The people were about to accept this proposal.

"Decidedly this man is betraying us," said Marat.

Then, turning to Billot, —

"Go to the Bastile," said he, "and do what you proposed to do. In an hour I will send you there twenty thousand men, and each man with a musket on his shoulder."

Billot, at first sight, had felt great confidence in this man, whose name had become so popular that it had reached even him. He did not even ask him how he calculated on procuring them. An abbé was there, imbued with the general enthusiasm of the moment, and crying, like all the rest, "To the Bastile!" Billot did not like abbés; but this one pleased him. He gave him the charge of continuing the distribution, which the worthy abbé accepted.

Then Marat mounted upon a post. There was at that moment the most frightful noise and tumult.

"Silence!" cried he; "I am Marat, and I wish to speak."

They were at once quieted, as if by magic, and every eye was directed towards the orator.

"You wish for arms?" he said.

"Yes! yes!" replied thousands of voices.

"To take the Bastile?"

"Yes! yes! yes!"

"Well, then, come with me, and you shall have them."

"And where?"

"To the Invalides, where there are twenty-five thousand muskets. To the Invalides!"

"To the Invalides! to the Invalides!" cried every voice.

"And now," said Marat to Billot, who had just called Pitou, "you will go to the Bastile?"

"Yes."

"Stay. It might happen that before my men arrive you may stand in need of assistance."

"In fact," said Billot, "that is possible."

Marat tore out a leaf from a small memorandum book, and wrote four words upon it with a pencil:—

"*This comes from Marat.*"

Then he drew a sign upon the paper.

"Well!" cried Billot, "what would you have me do with this note, since you do not tell me the name or the address of the person to whom I am to deliver it?"

"As to the address, the man to whom I recommend you has none; as to his name, it is well known. Ask the first workman you may meet for Gonchon, the Mirabeau of the people."

"Gonchon, — you remember that name Pitou."

"Gonchon or *Gonchoni*," said Pitou, "I shall not forget it."

"To the Invalides! to the Invalides!" howled the mob, with increasing ferocity.

"Well, then, go!" said Marat to Billot, "and may the genius of Liberty march before thee!"

"To the Invalides!" he then cried, in his turn.

And he went down the Quay de Gèvres, followed by more than twenty thousand men.

Billot, on his side, took with him some five or six thousand. These were all armed in one way or another.

At the moment when they were about to proceed along the bank of the river, and the remainder were going towards the Boulevard, the Provost of the Merchants called to them from a window:

"My friends," said he, "why is it that I see a green cockade in your hats?"

They were leaves of the linden trees of Camille Desmoulins, which many had adopted merely from seeing others wear them, but without even knowing their signification.

"Hope! hope!" cried several voices.

"Yes; but the colour that denotes hope is, at the same time, that of the Count d'Artois. Would you have the air of wearing the livery of a prince?"

"No, no!" cried all the crowd in chorus, and Billot louder than the rest.

"Well, then you ought to change that cockade; and if you will wear a livery, let it at least be that of the city of Paris, the mother of us all, — blue and red, my friends, blue and red."¹

"Yes, yes," cried every tongue; "blue and red."

Upon these words, every one trampled under foot his green cockade, every one called for ribands; as if by enchantment, the windows round the square were opened, and blue and red ribands rained down in floods.

But all the ribands that fell scarcely sufficed for a thousand men.

Instantly, aprons, silk gowns, scarfs, curtains, are torn, stripped, and cut in fragments; these fragments were formed into bows, rosettes, and scarfs. Every one took his share.

After which Billot's small army again moved forward.

It kept on recruiting as it advanced; all the arteries of the Faubourg Saint-Antoine sent to it as it passed the most ardent and the most active of their population.

They reached in tolerably good order the end of the Rue Lesdiguières, where already a mass of curious lookers-on — some timid, others calm, and others insolent — were gazing at the towers of the Bastille, exposed to an ardent sun.

The arrival of the popular drums by the Faubourg Saint-Antoine;

The arrival of about a hundred of the French Guards from the Boulevards;

The arrival of Billot and his troop at once changed the

¹ Some time afterwards, Monsieur de Lafayette also made the observation that blue and red were likewise the colours of the house of Orleans, and added to them a third colour, white, saying to those who received it from him, "I give you a cockade that will make the tour of the whole world."

character and the aspect of the assembled crowd; the timid became emboldened, the calm became excited, and the insolent began to threaten.

"Down with the cannon! down with the cannon!" cried twenty thousand voices, threatening with their clenched fists the heavy guns which stretched forth their brazen necks from the embrasures of the platforms.

Just at that moment, as if the governor of the Bastile had heard these cries and was obeying these injunctions of the crowd, some artillerymen approached the guns, which they drew in, and at last they disappeared entirely.

The crowd clapped their hands; they had then become a power, since the governor had yielded to their threats.

Notwithstanding this, the sentinels continued pacing backwards and forwards on the platforms. At every post was an Invalid and a Swiss.

After having cried "Down with the cannon!" the crowd shouted, "Down with the Swiss!" It was a continuation of the cry of the night before, "Down with the Germans!"

But the Swiss did not the less continue their guard, crossing the Invalides in their measured paces up and down.

One of those who cried "Down with the Swiss!" became impatient; he had a gun in his hand; he pointed the muzzle of his gun at the sentinel and fired.

The ball struck the gray wall of the Bastile, one foot below the coping stone of the tower, and immediately in front of the spot where the Swiss had passed. At the spot where the shot had struck, it left a white mark, but the sentinel did not stop, and did not even turn his head.

A loud murmur soon arose around the man who had fired, and thus was given the signal of attack, as unheard of as it was senseless. There was more of terror than of anger in this rumour. Many persons conceived that it was a crime punishable with death to have thus fired a musket-shot at the Bastile.

Billot gazed upon the dark green mass like to those fabu-

lous monsters which in ancient legends are represented to us as covered with scales. He counted the embrasures at which the cannon might at any given moment be rolled back to their places. He counted the number of muskets the muzzles of which might be directed through the loopholes at the assembled crowd.

And Billot shook his head, recalling to mind the words uttered by Flesselles.

"We shall never be able to get in there," said he.

"And why shall we never be able to get in?" said a voice close beside him.

Billot turned round and saw a man with a savage countenance, dressed in rags, and whose eyes sparkled like two stars.

"Because it appears to me impossible to take such a mass as that by force."

"The taking of the Bastille," said the man, "is not a deed of war, but an act of faith. Believe, and thou shalt succeed."

"Patience," said Billot, feeling in his pocket for his passport.

The man was deceived as to his meaning.

"Patience!" cried he. "Oh, yes, I understand you; you are fat; you — you look like a farmer."

"And I am one, in fact," said Billot.

"Then I can well understand why you say patience! You have been always well fed; but look behind you for a moment and see those spectres who are now surrounding us; see their dried-up veins, count their bones through the rents in their garments, and then ask them whether they understand the word patience."

"This is one who speaks well," said Pitou, "but he terrifies me."

"He does not terrify me," said Billot; and turning again towards the man, —

"Yes, patience," he said, "but only for another quarter of an hour, that's all."

"Ah! ah!" cried the man, smiling, "a quarter of an hour; that indeed is not too much. And what will you do between this and a quarter of an hour?"

"During that time I shall have visited the Bastile, I shall know the number of its garrison, I shall know the intentions of its governor; I shall know, in fine, the way into it."

"Yes! if after that you could only find the way out of it."

"Well, supposing that I do not get out of it; there is a man who will come and show me the way."

"And who is this man?"

"Gonchon, the Mirabeau of the people."

The man gave a start. His eyes emitted flashes of fire.

"Do you know him?" inquired he.

"No."

"Well, what mean you, then?"

"Why, I am going to know him; for I was told that the first to whom I might speak on the square before the Bastile would lead me to him. You are on the square of the Bastile; take me to him."

"What do you want with him?"

"To deliver to him this paper."

"From whom is it?"

"From Marat, the physician."

"From Marat! you know Marat!" exclaimed the man.

"I have just left him."

"Where?"

"At the Hôtel de Ville."

"What is he doing?"

"He is gone to arm twenty thousand men at the Invalides."

"In that case, give me that paper. I am Gonchon."

Billot drew back a step.

"You are Gonchon?" cried he.

"My friends," said the man in rags, "here is one who does not know me, and who is asking whether it is true that I am Gonchon."

The crowd burst into a loud laugh. It appeared to all these men that it was impossible that any one could be so ignorant as not to know their favourite orator.

"Long live Gonchon!" cried two or three thousand voices.

"Take it," said Billot, handing the paper to him.

"Friends," cried Gonchon, after having read it, and laying his hand on Billot's shoulder, "this is a brother. Marat recommends him; we can therefore rely upon him. What is your name?" said he to the farmer.

"My name is Billot."

"And mine," rejoined Gonchon, "is Hache, and between us both I trust we shall be able to do something."¹

The crowd smiled at this sanguinary jest.

"Yes, yes, we shall soon do something," cried they.

"Well! what are we going to do?" asked several voices.

"Why, zounds!" cried Gonchon, "we are going to take the Bastile."

"This is as it should be," cried Billot; "that is what I call speaking. Listen to me, brave Gonchon; how many men have you to back you?"

"Thirty thousand, or somewhere near that."

"Thirty thousand men you have at your disposal, twenty thousand who will soon be here from the Invalides, and ten thousand who are already here, — why, 't is more than enough to insure our success, or we shall never succeed at all."

"We shall succeed," replied Gonchon.

"I believe so. Well, then, call together your thirty thousand men. I in the mean time will go to the governor, and summon him to surrender. If he surrenders, so much the better; we shall avoid much bloodshed. If he will not surrender, the blood that will be spilled will fall upon his head; and in these days blood that is spilled in an

¹ Billot, in French, means *block*, — the block on which criminals' heads are struck off. Hache means *axe*. — TRANSLATOR.

unjust cause brings down misfortunes with it. Ask the Germans if it be not so."

"How long do you expect to remain with the governor?" asked Gonchon.

"As long as I possibly can; until the Bastile is completely invested, if it be possible. When I come out again, the attack will begin."

"'T is understood."

"You do not mistrust me?" said Billot to Gonchon, holding out his hand to him.

"Who, I?" replied Gonchon, with a smile of disdain, at the same time pressing the hand of the stout farmer, and with a strength that could not have been expected from his emaciated appearance; "I mistrust you! and for what reason, pray? If it were my will, upon a word, a sign given by me, I could have you pounded like glass, even were you sheltered by those formidable towers,— which to-morrow will no longer exist, — were you protected by these soldiers, who this evening will have espoused our party or will have ceased to exist. Go, then, and rely on Gonchon as he relies on Billot."

Billot was convinced, and walked towards the entrance of the Bastile, while the strange person with whom he had been conversing darted down the faubourg, amid shouts, repeated a thousand times, of —

"Long live Gonchon! Long live the Mirabeau of the people!"

"I do not know what the Mirabeau of the nobles may be," said Pitou to Billot, "but I think our Mirabeau a hideously ugly personage."

CHAPTER XVI.

THE BASTILE AND ITS GOVERNOR.

WE will not describe the Bastile, — it would be useless.

It lives as an eternal image both in the memory of the old and in the imagination of the young.

We shall content ourselves with merely stating that, seen from the Boulevard, it presented, in front of the square then called Place de la Bastile, two twin towers, while its two fronts ran parallel with the banks of the canal which now exists.

The entrance to the Bastile was defended, in the first place, by a guardhouse, then by two lines of sentinels, and besides these, by two drawbridges.

After having passed through these several obstacles, you came to the courtyard of the government house, — that is to say, the residence of the governor.

From this courtyard a gallery led to the ditches of the Bastile.

At this other entrance, which opened upon the ditches, was a drawbridge, a guardhouse, and an iron gate.

At the first entrance they wished to stop Billot; but Billot shows the passport he received from Flesselles, and they allow him to pass on.

Billot then perceives that Pitou is following him. Pitou had no permission; but he would have followed the farmer's steps down to the infernal regions, or would have ascended to the moon.

"Remain outside," said Billot. "Should I not come out again, it would be well there should be some one to remind the people that I have come in."

"That is perfectly right," said Pitou. "How long am I to wait before I remind them of it?"

"One hour."

"And the casket?" inquired Pitou.

"Ah, you remind me! Well, then, should I not get out again; should Gonchon not take the Bastille; or, in short, if, after having taken it, I should not be found, you must tell Doctor Gilbert, whom they will find, perhaps, that men who came from Paris took from me the casket which he confided to my care five years ago; that I, on the instant, started off to inform him of what had happened; that on arriving at Paris I was informed that he was in the Bastille; that I attempted to take the Bastille, and that in the attempt I left my skin there, which was altogether at his service."

"T is well, Father Billot," said Pitou; "only 't is rather a long story, and I am afraid I may forget it."

"Forget what I have said to you?"

"Yes."

"I will repeat it to you, then."

"No," said a voice close to Billot's ear; "it would be better to write it."

"I do not know how to write," said Billot.

"I do. I am an usher."

"Ah! you are an usher, are you?" inquired Billot.

"Stanislaus Maillard, usher in the court of the Châtelet."

And he drew from his pocket a long inkhorn, in which there were pens, paper, and ink; in fine, all that was necessary for writing.

He was a man about forty-five years old, tall, thin, and grave-looking, dressed entirely in black, as became his profession.

"Here is one who looks confoundedly like an undertaker," muttered Pitou.

"You say," inquired the usher, with great calmness, "that men who came from Paris carried off a casket which Doctor Gilbert confided to you?"

"Yes."

"That is a punishable crime."

"These men belonged to the police of Paris."

"Infamous robbers!" muttered Maillard.

Then, handing the paper to Pitou, —

"Here, take this, young man," said he; "it is the memorandum you require; and should he be killed," — he pointed to Billot, — "should you be killed, it is to be hoped that I shall not be killed too."

"And should you not be killed, what would you do?" asked Pitou.

"I would do that which you were to have done," replied Maillard.

"Thanks," said Billot.

And he held out his hand to the usher.

The usher grasped it with a vigour which could not have been anticipated from his lank, meagre body.

"Then I may fully depend upon you?" said Billot.

"As on Marat, — as on Gonchon."

"Good," said Pitou; "they form a trinity which I am sure I shall not find in paradise."

Then, going up to Billot, —

"Tell me, Father Billot, you will be prudent, will you not?"

"Pitou," replied the farmer, with an eloquence which sometimes astonished people when proceeding from one who had always led a country life, "forget not what I now say to you, — that the most prudent line of conduct now in France is to be courageous."

And he passed the first line of sentinels, while Pitou returned towards the square.

At the drawbridge he was again obliged to parley.

Billot showed his passport; the drawbridge was let down; the iron-grated gate was opened.

Close beside the gate stood the governor.

This interior court, in which the governor was waiting for Billot, was the courtyard which served as a promenade

to the prisoners. It was guarded by eight towers, — that is to say, by eight giants. No window opened into it; never did the sun shine on its pavement, which was damp and almost muddy. It might have been thought the bottom of an immense well.

In this courtyard was a clock, supported by figures representing enchained captives, which measured the hours, from which fell the regular and slow sounds of the minutes as they passed by, as in a dungeon the droppings from the ceiling eat into the pavement slabs on which they fall.

At the bottom of this well, the prisoner, lost amid the abyss of stone, for a moment contemplated its cold nakedness, and soon asked to be allowed to return to his cell.

Close beside the grated gate which opened on this courtyard stood, as we have said, Monsieur de Launay.

Monsieur de Launay was a man from forty-five to fifty years of age. On that day he was dressed in a gray coat; he wore the red riband of the order of Saint-Louis, and in his hand he carried a sword-cane.

This Monsieur de Launay was a man of wicked disposition; the memoirs of Linguet had just bestowed upon him a sorrowful celebrity; he was almost as much detested as the prison itself.

In fact, the De Launays, like the Châteauneufs, the Levrillières, and the Saint-Florentins, who held the *lettres de cachet* from father to son, the De Launays also from father to son transmitted the Bastille to one another.

For, as it is well known, it was not the minister who appointed the officers of this jail. At the Bastille all the places were sold to the highest bidder, from that of the governor himself down to that of the scullion. The governor of the Bastille was a jailer on a grand scale, an eating-house keeper wearing epaulettes, who added to his salary of sixty thousand livres sixty thousand more which he extorted and plundered.

It was highly necessary that he should recover the capital and interest of the money he had invested.

Monsieur de Launay, in point of avarice, far surpassed his predecessors. This might, perhaps, have arisen from his having paid more for the place, and having foreseen that he would not remain in it so long as they did.

He fed his whole house at the expense of his prisoners. He had reduced the quantity of firing, and doubled the hire of furniture in each room.

He had the right of bringing yearly into Paris a hundred pipes of wine, free of duty; he sold his right to a tavern-keeper, who brought in wines of excellent quality. Then, with a tenth part of this duty, he purchased the vinegar with which he supplied his prisoners.

The unhappy prisoners in the Bastile had only one consolation; this was a small garden, which had been formed on one of the bastions. There they could walk, — there for a few moments they could inhale pure air, the perfumes of the flowers, and enjoy the light.

He rented this little garden to a gardener, and for fifty livres a year which he received from him he had deprived the prisoners of this last enjoyment.

It is true that to rich prisoners his complaisance was extreme. He conducted one of them to the house of his own mistress, who had thus her apartments furnished, and was kept in luxury, without its costing a stiver to him, De Launay.

See the work entitled "The Bastile Unveiled," and you will find in it this fact, and many others besides.

And, notwithstanding, this man was courageous. From the previous evening the storm had been threatening around him. Since the previous evening, he perceived the waves of this great commotion, which was still ascending, beat against his walls.

And yet he was calm, though pale.

It is true that he had to support him four pieces of artillery, ready prepared to fire; around him, a garrison of Swiss and Invalides; before him only an unarmed man.

For, on entering the Bastile, Billot had given Pitou his carbine to take care of.

He had understood that within that iron grating which he saw before him a weapon would be more dangerous than useful to him.

Billot, at a single glance, observed all: the calm and almost threatening attitude of the governor; the Swiss and Invalides in the several guardhouses and on the platforms; and the silent agitation of the artillerymen, who were stowing their cartridges into the magazines of their ammunition-wagons.

The sentinels held their muskets at the make-ready; the officers had their swords drawn.

The governor remained motionless; Billot was obliged to advance towards him; the iron-grated gate closed behind the bearer of the people's flag of truce with a sinister noise of grating iron, which, brave as he was, made the marrow of his bones chill within him.

"What want you with me again?" said De Launay to him.

"Again!" reiterated Billot; "it appears to me, however, that this is the first time I have seen you, and consequently that you have yet no right to be wearied of seeing me."

"It is because I have been told that you come from the Hôtel de Ville."

"That is true; I came from there."

"Well, then, only just now I received a deputation from the municipality."

"And for what purpose did it come?"

"It came to obtain a promise from me that I would not be the first to fire."

"And you promised that you would not?"

"Yes."

"And was this all?"

"It also came to request that I would draw in my guns."

"And you did have them drawn in. I know that, for I was on the square of the Bastille when this manœuvre was executed."

"And you doubtless thought that I was yielding to the threats of the people?"

"Why, zounds! it did look very like it."

"Did I not tell you so, gentlemen?" exclaimed De Launay, turning toward his officers; "did I not tell you that we should be thought capable of such cowardice?"

Then, turning to Billot, —

"And you — from whom do you come?"

"I come on behalf of the people," proudly replied Billot.

"'Tis well," said De Launay, smiling; "but you have some other recommendation, I suppose; for with that which you set forth, you would not have been allowed to pass the first line of my sentries."

"Yes; I have a safe-conduct from Monsieur de Flesselles, your friend."

"Flesselles! You say that he is my friend," rejoined De Launay, looking intently at Billot, as if he would have read the inmost recesses of his heart. "From whom do you know that Monsieur de Flesselles is my friend?"

"Why, I supposed him to be so."

"Supposed! Oh, that is all! 'Tis well. Let us see your safe-conduct."

Billot presented the paper to him.

De Launay read it once; then a second time; and turned and twisted it about to discover whether it did not contain some postscript between its pages; held it up to the light, to see whether there were not some lines written between the lines of the missive.

"And this is all he has to say to me?"

"All."

"You are sure?"

"Perfectly sure."

"Nothing verbal?"

"Nothing."

"'Tis very strange!" exclaimed De Launay, darting through one of the loopholes a glance at the crowd assembled in the square before the Bastille.

"But what would you have had him send to tell you?" said Billot.

De Launay made an impatient gesture.

"Oh, nothing, nothing! Come, now, tell me what you want; but speak quickly, for I am pressed for time."

"Well, then, what I want is, that you should surrender the Bastile to us."

"What said you?" cried De Launay, quickly turning round, as if he thought he had misunderstood the farmer's meaning. "You say —"

"I say that I have come, in the name of the people, to demand that you surrender the Bastile."

De Launay shrugged up his shoulders.

"The people are, in truth, very strange animals," said he.

"Hey!" cried Billot.

"And what do they want to do with the Bastile?"

"They want to demolish it."

"And what the devil has the Bastile to do with the people? Was ever a man of the people put into the Bastile? The people, on the contrary, ought to bless every stone of which the Bastile is formed. Who are they who are put into the Bastile? Philosophers, men of science, aristocrats, ministers, princes, — that is to say, the enemies of the people."

"Well, that proves that the people are not egotists," retorted Billot.

"My friend," said De Launay, with a shade of commiseration in his tone, "it is easy to perceive that you are not a soldier."

"You are quite right. I am a farmer."

"That you do not inhabit Paris."

"In fact, I am from the country."

"That you do not thoroughly know what the Bastile is."

"That is true. I only know what I have seen of it, — that is to say, the exterior walls."

"Well, then, come along with me, and I will show you what the Bastile is."

"Ho! ho!" muttered Billot to himself, "he is going to lead me over some villainous trap-door, which will suddenly open under my feet, and then, good-night, Father Billot."

But the intrepid farmer did not even blink, and showed himself ready to follow the governor of the Bastile.

"In the first place," said De Launay, "you must know that I have powder enough in my cellars to blow up, not only the Bastile itself, but with it at least half of the Faubourg Saint-Antoine."

"I know that," tranquilly replied Billot.

"Very well; but now look at those four pieces of artillery."

"I see them."

"They enfilade the whole of this gallery, as you can also see; and this gallery is defended, first, by a guardhouse; secondly, by two ditches, which only can be crossed with the assistance of two drawbridges; and lastly, by a grated iron gate."

"Oh, I do not say that the Bastile is badly defended," calmly observed Billot; "all that I say is, that it will be well attacked."

"Let us go on," said De Launay.

Billot gave an assenting nod.

"Here is a postern which opens on the ditches," said the governor; "look at the thickness of the walls."

"Somewhere about forty feet."

"Yes; forty at the bottom, and fifteen at the top. You see that, although the people may have good nails, they would break them against these stones."

"I did not say," rejoined Billot, "that the people would demolish the Bastile before taking it. What I said was, that they would demolish it after having taken it."

"Let us go up stairs," said De Launay; "let us go up."

They went up some thirty steps.

The governor stopped.

"See," said he, "here is another embrasure, which opens

on the passage by which you wish to enter; this is only defended by a rampart gun; but it has already acquired a certain reputation. You know the song, —

‘O my tender Musette, —
Musette, my only love.’”

“Certainly,” said Billot, “I do know it; but I do not think that this is the time to sing it.”

“Wait a moment. Well, Marshal Saxe called this small cannon his Musette, because it sung correctly the air he best liked. That is an historical detail.”

“Oh!” ejaculated Billot.

“Let us go up higher,” and they continued to climb up the stairs.

They soon reached a platform on the tower called La Comté.

“Ah! ah!” ejaculated Billot.

“What is it?” inquired De Launay.

“You have not had the cannon dismounted.”

“I have had them drawn in, — that’s all.”

“You know that I shall tell the people that cannon are still here.”

“Tell them so.”

“You will not have them dismounted, then?”

“No.”

“Decidedly?”

“The king’s cannon are here by the king’s order, monsieur; they can only be dismounted by an order from the king.”

“Monsieur de Launay,” said Billot, feeling the importance of the moment, and raising his mind to the full height of it, with dignified eloquence, replied, “Monsieur de Launay, the real king, whom I counsel you to obey, is yonder.”

And he showed to the governor the gray crowd, some of whom were still covered with blood from the combat of the preceding evening, and whose undulating movements before the ditches made their arms gleam in the sunshine.

"Monsieur," said De Launay, in his turn, throwing his head back with a haughty air, "you may perhaps acknowledge two kings; but I, the governor of the Bastile, I know but one, and he is Louis, the Sixteenth of that name, who has affixed his name to a commission by virtue of which I command here both men and things."

"You are not, then, a citizen!" cried Billot, in anger.

"I am a French gentleman," said the governor.

"Ah! that is true, — you are a soldier, and you speak as a soldier."

"You have said the word, monsieur," said De Launay, bowing. "I am a soldier, and I execute the orders I receive."

"And I, monsieur," said Billot, "I am a citizen, and my duty as a citizen being in opposition with your orders as a soldier, one of us two will die, — whether it be the one who obeys his orders, or the one who fulfils his duty."

"It is probable, monsieur."

"Then you are determined to fire upon the people?"

"By no means, — so long as they do not fire upon me. I have pledged my word to the envoys of Monsieur de Flesselles. You see that the guns have been drawn in, but at the first shot fired from the square upon my castle —"

"Well, at the first shot?"

"I will run to one of these guns, — this one, for instance. I will myself wheel it to the embrasure, I will point it with my own hands, and I will fire it with the match you see standing here."

"You?"

"Yes, I."

"Oh! if I believed that," said Billot, "before allowing you to commit such a crime —"

"I have told you that I am a soldier, monsieur, and that I know nothing but my orders."

"Well, then, look!" said Billot, drawing De Launay towards an embrasure, and pointing out to him alternately two different points, the Faubourg Saint-Antoine and the

Boulevard, "yonder are those from whom in future you will receive your orders."

And he showed De Launay two dark, dense, and howling masses, who, compelled to take the form of the Boulevards, undulated like an immense serpent, of which the head and the body could be seen, but the last rings of which were lost to sight from the unevenness of the ground on which it crawled. And all that could be seen of the gigantic reptile was refulgent with luminous scales.

It was the double troop to which Billot had given rendezvous on the square of the Bastile, — the one led by Marat, and the other by Gonchon.

On both sides they advanced, brandishing their arms, and uttering the most terrific cries.

De Launay turned pale at the sight, and, raising his cane, —

"To your guns!" cried he.

Then, advancing towards Billot with a threatening gesture, —

"And you, wretch!" he exclaimed, "you, who have come here under the pretext of parleying with me while the others are advancing to the attack, do you know that you deserve to die?"

And he half drew his sword from the cane which concealed it.

Billot saw the movement, and, rapid as the lightning, seized De Launay by the collar and the waistband: —

"And you," said he, as he raised him from the ground, "you deserve that I should hurl you over the ramparts, to break your bones against the sides of the ditch! But, God be thanked! I shall fight you in another manner!"

At that moment an immense and universal clamour, proceeding from below, and rushing through the air like the wild howlings of the hurricane, reached their ears, and Monsieur de Losme, the Major of the Bastile, appeared upon the platform.

"Monsieur," cried he, addressing himself to Billot,

"monsieur, be pleased to show yourself; all those people yonder believe that some misfortune has befallen you, and they are calling for you."

And, in fact, the name of Billot, which had been spread among the crowd by Pitou, was heard amidst the clamour.

Billot had loosed his hold, and Monsieur de Launay sheathed his sword.

Then there was a momentary hesitation between these three men; cries calling for vengeance and threatening shouts were heard.

"Show yourself, then, monsieur," said De Launay; "not that these clamours intimidate me, but that it may be known that I am a man who loyally keeps his word."

Then Billot put his head between the battlements, making a sign with his hand.

On seeing this, loud shouts of applause rose from the populace; it was, in a manner, the revolution rising from the forehead of the Bastile in the person of this man of the people, who had been the first to trample on its platform as a conqueror.

"'Tis well, monsieur," then said De Launay, "all is now terminated between us; you have nothing further to do here. You are called for yonder; go down."

Billot was sensible of this moderation in a man who had him completely in his power; he went down the same staircase by which he had ascended the ramparts, the governor following him.

As to the major, he had remained there; the governor had given him some orders in a whisper.

It was evident that Monsieur de Launay had but one desire, and this was that the bearer of the flag of truce should become his enemy, and that as quickly as possible.

Billot walked across the courtyard without uttering a word; he saw the artillerymen standing by their guns. The match was smoking at the end of a lance.

Billot stepped before them.

"My friends," said he, "remember that I came to request

your chief to prevent the spilling of blood, and that he has refused."

"In the name of the king, monsieur," cried De Launay, stamping his foot, "leave this place!"

"Beware!" said Billot; "for if you order me out in the name of the king, I shall come in again in the name of the people."

Then, turning towards the guard-house, before which the Swiss were standing, —

"Come now," said he, "tell me for which side are you?"

The Swiss soldiers remained silent.

De Launay pointed with his finger to the iron gate.

Billot wished to essay a last effort.

"Monsieur," said he, "in the name of the nation! in the name of your brothers!"

"Of my brothers! You call my brothers those men who are howling, 'Down with the Bastile!' 'Death to its governor!' They may be your brothers, monsieur, but most assuredly they are not mine."

"In the name of humanity, then."

"In the name of humanity? which urges you on to come here, with a hundred thousand men, to cut the throats of a hundred unfortunate soldiers shut up in these walls."

"And by surrendering the Bastile you would be doing precisely that which would save their lives."

"And sacrifice my honour."

Billot said no more to him; this logic of the soldier completely overcame him; but turning to the Swiss and Invalides, —

"Surrender, my friends!" cried he, "it is still time. In ten minutes it will be too late."

"If you do not instantly withdraw, monsieur," in his turn cried De Launay, "on the word of a gentleman I will order you to be shot!"

Billot paused a moment, crossed his arms over his chest in token of defiance, exchanged a last threatening glance with De Launay, and passed through the gate.

CHAPTER XVII.

THE BASTILE.

THE crowd was waiting; scorched by the burning July sun, they were trembling, mad with excitement. Gonchon's men had just joined those of Marat. The Faubourg Saint-Antoine had recognised and saluted its brother, the Faubourg Saint-Marceau.

Gonchon was at the head of his patriots. As to Marat, he had disappeared.

The aspect of the square was frightful.

On Billot's appearance the shouts redoubled.

"Well?" said Gonchon, going up to him.

"Well, this man is a man of courage," said Billot.

"What mean you by saying, 'This man is a man of courage'?" inquired Gonchon.

"I mean to say that he is obstinate."

"He will not surrender the Bastile?"

"No."

"He will obstinately sustain the siege?"

"Yes."

"And you believe that he will sustain it long?"

"To the very death."

"Be it so! Death he shall have!"

"But what numbers of men we are about to expose to death!" exclaimed Billot, doubting assuredly that God had given him the right which generals arrogate to themselves, as do kings and emperors, — men who have received commissions to shed blood.

"Pooh!" said Gonchon, "there are too many in this world, since there is not bread enough for half the population. Is it not so, friends?"

"Yes! yes!" cried the crowd, with a sublime self-abnegation.

"But the ditch?" observed Billot, inquiringly.

"It is only necessary that it should be filled up at one particular spot," replied Gonchon, "and I have calculated that with the half of the bodies we have here we could fill it up completely; is it not so, friends?"

"Yes! yes!" repeated the crowd, with no less enthusiasm than before.

"Well, then, be it so!" said Billot, though completely overcome.

At that moment De Launay appeared upon the terrace, followed by Major de Losme and two or three officers.

"Begin!" cried Gonchon to the governor.

The latter turned his back without replying.

Gonchon, who would perhaps have endured a threat, could not endure disdain; he quickly raised his carbine to his shoulder, and a man in the governor's suite fell to the ground.

A hundred shots, a thousand musket shots, were fired at the same moment, as if they had only waited for this signal, and marbled with white the gray towers of the Bastile.

A silence of some seconds succeeded this discharge, as if the crowd itself had been alarmed at that which it had done.

Then a flash of fire, lost in a cloud of smoke, crowned the summit of a tower; a detonation resounded; cries of pain were heard issuing from the closely pressed crowd; the first cannon-shot had been fired from the Bastile; the first blood had been spilled. The battle had commenced.

What the crowd experienced, which just before had been so threatening, very much resembled terror. That Bastile, defending itself by this sole act, appeared in all its formidable impregnability. The people had doubtless hoped that, in those days when so many concessions had been made to them, the surrender of the Bastile would be accomplished without the effusion of blood.

The people were mistaken. The cannon-shot which had been fired upon them gave them the measure of the Titanio work which they had undertaken.

A volley of musketry, well directed, and coming from the platform of the Bastille, followed closely on the cannon-shot.

Then all was again silent for a while, a silence which was interrupted only by a few cries, a few groans, a few complainings uttered here and there.

A shuddering anxious movement could then be perceived among the crowd; it was the people who were picking up their killed and wounded.

But the people thought not of flying, or if they did think of it, they were ashamed of the feeling when they considered their great numbers.

In fact, the Boulevards, the Rue Saint-Antoine, the Faubourg Saint-Antoine, formed but one vast human sea; every wave had a head, every head two flashing eyes, a threatening mouth.

In an instant all the windows of the neighbourhood were filled with sharp-shooters, even those which were out of gun-shot.

Whenever a Swiss soldier or an Invalid appeared upon the terraces or in one of the embrasures, a hundred muskets were at once aimed at him, and a shower of balls splintered the corners of the stones behind which the soldier was sheltered.

But they soon got tired of firing at insensible walls. It was against human flesh that their balls were directed. It was blood that they wished to see spout forth wherever the balls struck, and not dust.

Numerous opinions were emitted from amid the crowd.

A circle would then be formed around the orator, and when the people thought the proposal was devoid of sense they at once left him.

A blacksmith proposed to form a catapult, upon the model of the ancient Roman machines, and with it to make a breach in the walls of the Bastille.

A brewer, who commanded the Faubourg Saint-Antoine, and whose name has since acquired a fatal celebrity, proposed to set fire to the fortress, by throwing into it a quantity of oil, which had been seized the night before, and which they were to ignite with phosphorus.

The firemen proposed to inundate with their fire-engines the priming of the cannon and the matches of the artillerymen, without reflecting that the most powerful of their engines could not throw water even to two thirds the height of the walls of the Bastile.

Billot listened to all these mad-brained proposals one after the other. On hearing the last, he seized a hatchet from the hands of a carpenter, and, advancing amid a storm of bullets, which struck down all around him numbers of men, huddled together as thickly as ears of corn in a field, he reached a small guardhouse near to the first drawbridge, and although the grape-shot was whizzing and cracking against the roof, he ascended it, and by his powerful and well-directed blows, succeeded in breaking the chains, and the drawbridge fell with a tremendous crash.

During the quarter of an hour which this seemingly insensate enterprise had occupied, the crowd were palpitating with excitement. At every report, they expected to see the daring workman fall from the roof. The people forgot the danger to which they were exposed, and thought only of the danger which this brave man was incurring. When the bridge fell, they uttered a loud, joyful cry, and rushed into the first courtyard.

The movement was so rapid, so impetuous, so irresistible, that the garrison did not even attempt to prevent it.

Shouts of frantic joy announced this first advantage to Monsieur de Launay.

No one even observed that a man had been crushed to atoms beneath the mass of wood-work. Then the four pieces of artillery which the governor had shown to Billot were simultaneously discharged with a frightful explosion, and swept the first courtyard of the fortress.

The iron hurricane traced through the crowd a long furrow of blood. Ten men shot dead, fifteen or twenty wounded, were the consequences of this discharge.

Billot slid down from the roof of the guardhouse to the ground, on reaching which he found Pitou, who had come there he knew not how. Pitou's eyes were quick, as are those of all poachers. He had seen the artillerymen preparing to put their matches to the touchholes of their guns, and, seizing Billot by the skirts of his jacket, jerked him violently towards him, and thus they were both protected by the angle of the wall from the effects of their first discharge.

From that moment the affair became really serious. The tumult was actually frightful, — the combat a mortal one. Ten thousand muskets were at once fired round the Bastile, more dangerous in their effect to the besiegers than to the besieged.

At length a cannon served by the French Guards had mixed its thunder with the musketry.

The noise was frightful, but the crowd appeared to be more and more intoxicated by it; and this noise began to terrify even the besieged, who, calculating their own small number, felt that they could never equal the noise which was then deafening them.

The officers of the Bastile felt instinctively that their soldiers were becoming disheartened. They snatched their muskets from them, and themselves fired upon the crowd.

At this moment, and amid the noise of artillery and musketry, amid the howlings of the crowd, as some of them were rushing to pick up the dead bodies of their companions to form of them a new incitement, — for their gaping wounds would cry aloud for vengeance against the besieged, — there appeared at the entrance of the first courtyard a small group of unarmed, quiet citizens. They made their way through the crowd, and advanced, ready to sacrifice their lives, protected only by a white flag,

which preceded them, and which intimated that they were the bearers of a message to the governor.

It was a deputation from the Hôtel de Ville. The electors knew that hostilities had commenced, and, anxious to prevent the effusion of blood, had compelled Flesselles to send new proposals to the governor.

The deputies came, therefore, in the name of the city to summon Monsieur de Launay to order the firing to cease, and to guarantee at once the lives of the citizens, his own, and those of the garrison, — to propose that he should receive one hundred men of the civic guard into the interior of the fortress.

This was the rumour which was spread as the deputies advanced. The people, terrified at the enterprise they had undertaken, the people, who saw the dead bodies of their companions carried out in litters, were quite ready to support this proposal. Let De Launay accept a half defeat, and satisfy himself with half a victory.

At their approach, the fire of the second courtyard ceased. A sign was made to them that they might approach; and they accordingly advanced, slipping on the ensanguined pavement, striding over carcasses, and holding out their hands to the wounded.

Under this protection, the people form themselves into groups. The dead bodies and the wounded are carried out of the fortress: the blood alone remains, marbling with large purple spots the pavement of the courtyard.

The fire from the fortress had ceased. Billot was leaving it, in order to stop that of the besiegers. At the door he meets Gonchon, — Gonchon, altogether unarmed, exposing himself like one inspired, calm, as if he were invulnerable.

"Well," inquired he of Billot, "what has become of the deputation?"

"It has gone into the fortress," replied Billot; "order our men to cease firing."

"It will be useless," said Gonchon, "they will not consent."

"That matters not," rejoined Billot; "it is our duty to make the attempt. Let us respect the usages of war, since we have become soldiers."

"Be it so," said Gonchon.

Then, addressing himself to two men in the crowd, who appeared to command under him the whole of the assembled mass, —

"Go, Elie, — go, Hullin," said he, "and see that not a musket-shot be fired."

The two aides-de-camp rushed out, and, obeying the orders of their chief, pressed through the crowded masses, and soon the firing of the musketry diminished, and then ceased altogether.

A momentary quiet was established. Advantage was taken of it to attend to the wounded, the number of whom had already amounted to thirty-five or forty.

During this respite, the prison clock struck two. The attack had begun at noon, the combat had already lasted two hours.

Billot had returned to his post, and it was Gonchon in his turn who followed him.

His eyes were turned anxiously towards the gate. His impatience was visible.

"What is the matter with you?" inquired Billot.

"The matter is," replied Gonchon, "that, if the Bastile is not taken within two hours from this time, all is lost."

"And why so?"

"Because the court will be informed of the work we are about, and will despatch the Swiss to us, under Bezenval, and Lambesq's dragoons; so that we shall then be caught between three fires."

Billot was compelled to acknowledge that there was some truth in what Gonchon was saying.

At length the deputies reappeared. From their countenances it was evident they had obtained no concession.

"Well," cried Gonchon, whose eyes sparkled with delight, "what did I tell you? Things that are predicted must happen. The accursed fortress is condemned!"

ANGE PITOU.

Then, without waiting even to put a question to the deputation, he sprang out of the first courtyard, crying, —

“To arms, my children! —to arms! The commandant refuses.”

And, in fact, the governor had scarcely read the letter from Flesselles, when his countenance brightened; and, instead of acceding to the proposals which had been made to him, he exclaimed, —

“Gentlemen Parisians, you have insisted on a battle, and now it is too late to speak of treating.”

The bearers of the flag of truce persisted in urging their suit; they represented to De Launay all the evils which his defending the castle might entail; but he would not listen to them; and he concluded by saying to the deputation what he had said two hours before to Billot, —

“Leave the fortress, or I will have you shot.”

And the bearers of the flag of truce were compelled to leave the governor.

On this occasion it was De Launay who resumed the offensive. He appeared burning with impatience.

Before the deputies had reached the gate of the courtyard, the Musette of Marshal Saxe played a tune, and three persons fell, — one of them dead, two others wounded.

One of the wounded was a French Guard; the other, one of the deputies.

On seeing a man whose office should have rendered him sacred carried forth covered with blood, the crowd became more enraged than ever.

Gonchon's two aides-de-camp had returned to their places at his side; but each of them had had time to go home to change his dress.

It is true that one of them lived near the Arsenal, the other in the Rue de Charonne.

Hullin, who had in the first place been a watchmaker at Geneva, then chasseur to the Marquis de Conflans, returned in his brilliant livery, which gave him the appearance of a Hungarian officer.

Elie, formerly an officer in the Queen's Regiment, had put on his uniform, which inspired the people with greater confidence, as it made them believe that the army was for them and with them.

The firing recommenced with greater fury than ever. And at that moment the Major of the Bastile, Monsieur de Losme, approached the governor.

He was a brave and faithful soldier; but there were some remains of the citizen in him, and he saw with much regret what had taken place, and, above all, what was likely to ensue.

"Monsieur," said he to De Launay, "we have no provisions, and of this you must be aware."

"I know it," replied the governor.

"You also know that we have no orders."

"I beg your pardon, Monsieur de Losme; my orders are to keep the gates of the Bastile closed, and it is for that purpose that the keys are intrusted to me."

"Monsieur, the keys are used as well to open the gates as to close them. Beware that you do not cause the massacre of the whole of the garrison without saving the castle, two triumphs on the same day. Look at those men whom we are killing; they appear to spring up from beneath the pavement. This morning there were at first only five hundred of them: three hours ago there were ten thousand. They are more than sixty thousand now; to-morrow they will be a hundred thousand. When our guns shall be silenced, and it must at last end in that, they will be strong enough to take the Bastile with their hands."

"You speak not like a soldier, Monsieur de Losme."

"I speak like a Frenchman, monsieur. I say that his Majesty, not having given us any order, — I say that the Provost of the Merchants, having made us a proposal which was a very acceptable one, which was that of admitting a hundred men of the civic guard into the castle, you might, to avoid the evils which I foresee, accede to the proposal of Monsieur de Flesselles."

"In your opinion, then, Monsieur de Losme, the power which represents the city of Paris is a power which we ought to obey?"

"In the absence of the direct authority of his Majesty, yes, monsieur, it is my opinion."

"Well, then," said De Launay, leading the major into a corner of the courtyard, "read that, Monsieur de Losme."

And he handed him a small square piece of paper.

The major read it: —

"Hold firm! I amuse the Parisians with cockades and promises. Before the close of the day, Monsieur de Bezenval will send you a reinforcement.

"DE FLESSELLES"

"How then, did this note reach you, monsieur?" inquired the major.

"In the letter which the gentlemen of the deputation brought me. They thought they were delivering to me a request to surrender the Bastile, while they were delivering to me an order to defend it."

The major bowed his head.

"Go to your post, Monsieur de Losme, and do not leave it until I send for you."

Monsieur de Losme obeyed.

De Launay very quietly refolded the letter, and put it into his pocket. He then returned to his artillerymen, and recommended them to fire low, and to take good aim.

The artillerymen obeyed, as Monsieur de Losme had obeyed.

But the fate of the fortress was predestined. No human power could delay its fulfilment.

To every cannon-shot the people replied by shouting, —

"We will have the Bastile!"

And while mouths were shouting, arms were vigorously acting.

Among the voices which shouted most energetically, among the arms which were acting the most efficaciously, were the voices and arms of Pitou and Billot.

Only each of them proceeded according to his different nature.

Billot, courageous and confident, as is the bull-dog, had from the first rushed forward defying balls and grape-shot.

Pitou, prudent and circumspect, like the fox, Pitou, endowed to a supreme degree with the instinct of self-preservation, made use of all his faculties to watch the danger and avoid it.

His eyes knew the embrasures which sent forth the most deadly fire; they distinguished the almost imperceptible movement of the brazen mouth which was about to be fired. He had at last studied the thing so minutely that he could divine the precise moment when the battery gun was about to be fired across the drawbridge.

Then his eyes having performed their office, it was the turn of his limbs to work for their proprietor.

His shoulders were drawn in, his chest contracted, his whole body did not seem to offer a larger surface than a plank when seen edgewise.

In these movements of Pitou, of the chubby Pitou, — for Pitou was thin only in the legs, — there remained only a geometrical line, which had neither breadth nor thickness.

He had selected for his post a corner in the passage from the first drawbridge to the second, a sort of vertical parapet formed by jutting stones; his head was protected by one of these stones, his body by another, his knees by a third, and Pitou congratulated himself that nature and the art of fortification were thus so agreeably combined that a stone was given to him to protect each of the parts where a wound might have proved mortal.

From his corner, in which he was covered like a hare in its form, he now and then fired a shot, but merely for form's sake, for he had before him only walls and pieces of timber; but this evidently pleased Billot, who from time to time called out, —

“Fire, you lazy fellow, fire!”

And he, in his turn, would cry to Billot, but in order to calm his exuberant ardour instead of exciting it, —

"But do not expose yourself so much, Father Billot."

Or else, —

"Take care of yourself, Monsieur Billot, there is a cannon pointed at you; there, I have just heard them cocking the Musette."

And scarcely had Pitou uttered these words, so full of foresight, than the cannon belched forth its grape-shot, sweeping the passage between the bridges.

Notwithstanding all these injunctions, Billot performed prodigies of strength and activity, but of perfect inutility. Not being able to shed his blood, and assuredly it was not his fault, he shed large and abundant drops of perspiration.

Ten times did Pitou seize him by the skirts of his jacket, and pulled him to the ground in spite of his great strength, at the moment when a discharge would have assuredly swept him off.

But each time Billot jumped up again, not only, like Antæus, with renewed strength, but with some new idea.

At one time this idea consisted in venturing upon the platform of the bridge to hack at the beams which the chains upheld, as he had before done.

Then Pitou uttered fearful howls to restrain the farmer, and finding that his howling was of no avail, he would rush from his place of safety to him, crying, —

"Monsieur Billot, my dear Monsieur Billot, why, Madame Billot will be a widow if you go on in this way."

And the Swiss soldiers could be seen placing their muskets obliquely through the embrasure of the Musette, to aim at the audacious man who was endeavouring to reduce their bridge to chips.

At another time he called upon his men to bring up a cannon to destroy the head-work of the bridge; but then the Musette was fired, the gunners retreated, and Billot remained alone to load the gun and fire it, which again brought out Pitou from his retreat.

"Monsieur Billot," cried he, **"Monsieur Billot, in the name of Mademoiselle Catherine I conjure you, reflect**

a moment. Should you get yourself killed, Mademoiselle Catherine will be an orphan."

And Billot yielded to this reason, which appeared to have much more influence on his mind than the first.

At length the fruitful imagination of the farmer gave birth to another idea.

He ran towards the square, crying, —

"A cart ! bring a cart here !"

Pitou considered that that which was good would be rendered excellent by being doubled. He followed Billot, vociferating, —

"Two carts ! two carts !"

And immediately ten carts were brought.

"Some straw and some dry hay !" cried Billot.

"Some straw and some dry hay !" reiterated Pitou.

And almost instantly two hundred men came forward, each carrying a truss of straw or hay.

They were obliged to call out that they had ten times more than they wanted. In an hour there was a heap of forage which would have equalled the height of the Bastile.

Billot placed himself between the shafts of a cart loaded with straw, and instead of dragging it, he pushed it on before him.

Pitou did the same, without knowing what it could be for, but thinking that he could not do better than to imitate the farmer.

Elie and Hullin divined Billot's intention; they each seized a cart and pushed it before them into the court-yard.

They had scarcely entered when they were assailed by a discharge of grape-shot; they heard the balls strike with a whizzing sound among the straw or hay, or against the wood-work of the carts. But neither of the assailants received a wound.

As soon as this discharge was over, two or three hundred men with muskets rushed on behind those who were pushing forward the carts, and, sheltered by those moving ramparts, they lodged themselves beneath the apron of the bridge itself.

There Billot drew from his pocket a flint, a steel, and some tinder, formed a match by rubbing gunpowder on paper, and set fire to it.

The powder ignited the paper, and the paper ignited the straw and hay.

Each formed a torch for himself, and the four carts were simultaneously set fire to.

The flames reached the apron, caught the timbers with its acerated teeth, and ran along the wood-work of the bridge.

A shout of joy then uttered from the courtyard was taken up by the crowd in the Place Saint-Antoine, and reiterated with deafening clamours. They saw the smoke rising above the walls, and they hence imagined that something fatal to the besieged was occurring.

In fact, the reddened chains detached themselves from the beams. The bridge fell, half broken and destroyed by fire, smoking and cracking. The firemen rushed forward with their engines and soon extinguished the flames upon the bridge.

The governor ordered the Invalides to fire upon the people, but they refused.

The Swiss alone obeyed; but they were not artillerymen, they were therefore obliged to abandon the guns.

The French Guards, on the contrary, seeing that the enemy's fire was discontinued, brought up their gun and planted it before the gate; their third shot shivered it to pieces.

The governor had gone up to the platform of the castle to see whether the promised reinforcement was approaching, when he found himself suddenly enveloped in smoke. It was then that he precipitately descended and ordered the artillerymen to fire.

The refusal of the Invalides exasperated him. The breaking down of the gate made him at once comprehend that all was lost.

Monsieur de Launay knew that he was hated. He felt

that there was no salvation for him. During the whole time that the combat had lasted, he had matured the idea of burying himself beneath the ruins of the Bastile.

At the moment he felt assured that all further defence was hopeless, he snatched a match from the hand of one of the artillerymen, and sprang towards the cellar which served as a powder magazine.

"The gunpowder! the powder!" cried twenty terrified voices, "the powder! the powder!"

They saw the burning match in the governor's hand. They guessed his purpose. Two soldiers rush forward and cross their bayonets before his breast just at the moment when he had opened the door.

"You may kill me," said De Launay, "but you cannot kill me quick enough to prevent me letting this match fall among the powder casks; and then besieged and besiegers will all be blown to atoms."

The two soldiers stopped. Their bayonets remained crossed and pointed at De Launay's breast, but De Launay was still their commander, for all felt that he had the lives of the whole of them in his power. His action had nailed every one to the spot on which he stood. The assailants perceived that something extraordinary was happening. They looked anxiously into the courtyard, and saw the governor threatened and threatening in his turn.

"Hear me," cried De Launay, to the besiegers; "as surely as I hold this match in my hand, with which I could exterminate you all, should any one of you make a single step to enter this courtyard so surely will I set fire to the powder."

Those who heard these words imagined that they already felt the ground trembling beneath their feet.

"What is your wish? what do you demand?" cried several voices with an accent of terror.

"I wish for a capitulation," replied De Launay, "an honourable capitulation."

The assailants pay but little attention to what the governor said; they cannot credit such an act of despair; they wish to enter the courtyard. Billot is at their head. Suddenly Billot trembles and turns pale; he had just remembered Dr. Gilbert.

As long as Billot had thought only of himself, it was a matter of little importance to him whether the Bastile was blown up, and he blown up with it, but Gilbert's life must be saved at any cost.

"Stop!" exclaimed Billot, throwing himself before Elie and Hullin; "stop in the name of the prisoners!"

And these men, who feared not to encounter death themselves, retreated, pale and trembling, in their turn.

"What do you demand?" they cried, renewing the question they had previously put to the governor by his own men.

"I demand that you should all withdraw," replied De Launay, fiercely. "I will not accept any proposal so long as there remains a single stranger in the Bastile."

"But," said Billot, "will you not take advantage of our absence to place yourself again in a state of defence?"

"If the capitulation is refused, you shall find everything in the state it now is: you at that gate, I where I am now standing."

"You pledge your word for that?"

"On the honour of a gentleman."

Some of them shook their heads.

"On the honour of a gentleman," reiterated De Launay. "Is there one here who can still doubt, when a gentleman has pledged his honour?"

"No, no, no one!" repeated five hundred voices.

"Let paper, pen, and ink be brought here to me."

The orders of the governor were instantly obeyed.

"T is well," said De Launay.

Then, turning towards the assailants, —

"And now, you must retire."

Billot, Hullin, and Elie set the example, and were the first to withdraw.

All the others followed them.

De Launay placed the match by his side, and began writing the capitulation on his knee.

The Invalides and the Swiss soldiers, who felt that their existence depended on the result, gazed at him while he was writing with a sort of respectful terror.

De Launay looked round before allowing his pen to touch the paper. He saw that the courtyard was free of all intruders.

In an instant the people outside were informed of all that had happened within the fortress.

As Monsieur de Losme had said, the population seemed to spring up from beneath the pavement. One hundred thousand men surrounded the Bastile.

They were no longer merely labourers and artisans, but citizens of every class had joined them. They were not merely men in the prime of life, but children and old men had rushed forward to the fight.

And all of them had arms of some description, all of them shouted vehemently.

Here and there among the groups was to be seen a woman in despair, with hair dishevelled, wringing her hands, and uttering maledictions against the granite giant.

She is some mother whose son the Bastile has just annihilated, some daughter whose father the Bastile has just levelled with the ground, some wife whose husband the Bastile has just exterminated.

But during some moments no sounds had issued from the Bastile, no flames, no smoke. The Bastile had become as silent as the tomb.

It would have been useless to endeavour to count the spots made by the balls which had marbled its surface. Every one had wished to fire a ball at the stone monster, the visible symbol of tyranny.

Therefore, when it was rumoured in the crowd that the Bastile was about to capitulate, that its governor had promised to surrender, they could scarcely credit the report.

Amid this general doubt, as they did not yet dare to congratulate themselves, as they were silently awaiting the result, they saw a letter pushed forth through a loophole on the point of a sword. Only between this letter and the besiegers there was the ditch of the Bastile, wide, deep, and full of water.

Billot calls for a plank. Three are brought and are pushed across the ditch, but, being too short, did not reach the opposite side. A fourth is brought, which lodges on either side of the ditch.

Billot had them lashed together as he best could, and then ventured unhesitatingly upon the trembling bridge.

The whole crowd remained breathlessly silent; all eyes were fixed upon the man who appears suspended above the ditch, whose stagnant waters resemble those of the river Cocytus.

Pitou tremblingly seated himself on the edge of the slope, and hid his head between his knees.

His heart failed him, and he wept.

When Billot had got about two thirds of the way over the plank, it twisted beneath his feet. Billot extends his arms, falls and disappears in the ditch.

Pitou utters a fearful groan and throws himself into the ditch, like a Newfoundland dog anxious to save his master.

A man then approached the plank from which Billot had just before been precipitated.

Without hesitation he walked across the temporary bridge. This man is Stanislaus Maillard, the usher of the Châtelet.

When he had reached the spot below which Pitou and Billot were struggling in the muddy ditch, he for a moment cast a glance upon them, and, seeing that there was no doubt they would regain the shore in safety, he continued to walk on.

Half a minute afterwards he had reached the opposite side of the ditch, and had taken the letter which was held out to him on the point of a sword.

Then, with the same tranquillity, the same firmness of step, he recrossed the ditch.

But at the moment when the crowd were pressing round him to hear the letter read, a storm of musket-balls rained down upon them from the battlements, and a frightful detonation was heard.

One only cry, but one of those cries which announce the vengeance of a whole people, issues from every mouth.

"Trust, then, in tyrants!" exclaimed Gonchon.

And then, without thinking any more of the capitulation, without thinking any more of the powder magazine, without thinking of themselves or of the prisoners, without desiring, without demanding anything but vengeance, the people rushed into the courtyard, no longer by hundreds of men, but by thousands.

That which prevents the crowd from entering is no longer the musketry, but the gates, which are too narrow to admit them.

On hearing the detonation we have spoken of, the two soldiers who were still watching Monsieur de Launay threw themselves upon him; a third snatched up the match, and then extinguished it by placing his heel upon it.

De Launay drew the sword which was concealed in his cane, and would have turned it against his own breast, but the soldiers seized it and snapped it in two.

He then felt that all he could do was to resign himself to the result; he therefore tranquilly awaited it.

The people rush forward; the garrison open their arms to them; and the Bastille is taken by assault, — by main force, without a capitulation.

The reason for this was, that for more than a hundred years the royal fortress had not merely imprisoned inert matter within its walls, — it had imprisoned thought also. Thought had thrown down the walls of the Bastille, and the people entered by the breach.

As to the discharge of the musketry which had taken place amid the general silence during the suspension of

hostilities, — as to this unforeseen aggression, as impolitic as it was murderous, — it was never known who had ordered it, who had excited it, how it was accomplished.

There are moments when the destiny of a whole nation is being weighed in the scales of Fate. One of them weighs down the other. Every one already thinks he has attained the proposed end. Suddenly some invisible hand lets fall into the other scale the blade of a poniard or a pistol-ball. Then all changes, and one only cry is heard, "Woe to the vanquished!"

CHAPTER XVIII.

DOCTOR GILBERT.

WHILE the people were thus rushing into the fortress, howling at once with joy and rage, two men were struggling in the muddy waters of the ditch.

These men were Pitou and Billot.

Pitou was supporting Billot. No shot had struck him, he had not been wounded in any way; but his fall had somewhat confused the worthy farmer.

Ropes were thrown to them,—poles were held out to them.

Pitou caught hold of a pole, Billot a rope.

Five minutes afterwards they were carried in triumph by the people, and eagerly embraced, notwithstanding their muddy state.

One man gives Billot a glass of brandy, another stuffs Pitou's mouth full of sausages, and gives him wine to wash them down.

A third rubs them down with straw, and wishes to place them in the sun to dry their clothes.

Suddenly, an idea, or rather a recollection, shot through the mind of Billot; he tears himself away from their kind cares and rushes into the Bastile.

"To the prisoners!" cried he, "to the prisoners!"

"Yes, to the prisoners!" cried Pitou, in his turn, bounding after the farmer.

The crowd, which until then had thought only of the executioners, shuddered when thinking of their victims.

They with one shout repeated: "Yes, yes, yes,—to the prisoners!"

And a new flood of assailants rush through the barriers, seeming to widen the sides of the fortress by their numbers, and bearing liberty with them to the captives.

A dreadful spectacle then offered itself to the eyes of Billot and Pitou. The excited, enraged, maddened throng had precipitated themselves into the courtyard; the first soldier they had met was at once hacked to pieces.

Gonchon had quietly looked on. Doubtless he had thought that the anger of the people, like the currents of great rivers, does more harm when any impediment is thrown in its way to arrest it than if allowed tranquilly to flow on.

Elie and Hullin, on the contrary, had thrown themselves before the infuriated slaughterers; they prayed, they supplicated, uttering the sublime lie that they had promised life and safety to the whole garrison.

The arrival of Billot and Pitou was a reinforcement to them.

Billot, whom they were avenging, Billot was living, Billot was not even wounded. The plank had turned under his feet, and that was all; he had taken a mud-bath, and nothing more.

It was above all against the Swiss that the people were particularly enraged, but the Swiss were nowhere to be found; they had had time to put on gray frocks, and they were taken for either servants or for prisoners.

The mob hurled large stones at the dial of the clock, and destroyed the figures of the two captives which supported it. They rushed to the ramparts to mutilate the cannon which had vomited forth death upon them; they even wreaked their vengeance on the stone walls, tearing their hands in endeavouring to displace them. When the first of the conquerors were seen upon the platform, all those who had remained without the fortress, that is to say a hundred thousand men, shouted with clamorous joy, —

"The Bastille is taken!"

This cry resounded through Paris, and spread itself over the whole of France, as if borne with the rapidity of eagle's wings.

On hearing this cry all hearts were softened, all eyes shed tears, all arms were extended; there were no longer any contending parties; there were no longer any inimical castes; all Parisians felt that they were brothers, all men felt that they were free.

A million of men pressed each other in a mutual embrace.

Billot and Pitou had entered the Bastile, following some and followed by others; what they wished for was, not to claim their share in the triumph, — it was the liberty of the prisoners.

When crossing the courtyard of the government house, they passed near a man in a gray coat, who was standing calmly, his hand resting on a gold-headed cane.

This man was the governor; he was quietly waiting either that his friends should come to save him, or that his enemies should come to strike him down.

Billot, on perceiving him, recognised him, uttered a light exclamation of surprise, and went straight to him.

De Launay also recognised Billot; he crossed his arms and waited, looking at the farmer with an expression that implied, —

“Let us see; is it you that will give me the first blow?”

Billot at once divined the meaning of his look, and stopped.

“If I speak to him,” said he to himself, “I shall cause him to be recognised, and should he be recognised his death is certain.”

And yet how was he to find Doctor Gilbert amid this chaotic confusion? How could he drag from the Bastile the secret which its walls enclosed?

All this hesitation, these heroic scruples, were understood by De Launay.

“What is it that you wish?” asked De Launay, in an undertone.

"Nothing," replied Billot, pointing with his finger to the gate, indicating to him that escape was yet possible; "nothing. I shall be able readily to find Doctor Gilbert."

"Third Bertaudière," replied De Launay, in a gentle and almost affectionate tone of voice.

But he stirred not from the place on which he stood.

Suddenly a voice from behind Billot pronounced these words:—

"Ah! there is the governor."

This voice was so calm, so hollow, that it appeared not to be of this world, and yet each word it had uttered was a sharp poniard turned against the breast of De Launay.

He who had spoken was Gonchon.

These words, like the first sounds of an alarm bell, excited a fearful commotion. All these men, drunk with revengeful feelings, started on hearing them; they looked around with flaming eyes, perceived De Launay, and at once darted upon and seized him.

"Save him," said Billot, as he passed near Elie and Hullin, "or they will murder him."

"Assist us to do so," said the two men.

"I am obliged to remain here," replied Billot, "for I also have some one to save."

In an instant De Lauray had been surrounded by a thousand men, who dragged him along, lifted him up, and were bearing him away.

Elie and Hullin bounded after him, crying, —

"Stop! stop! we promised him that his life should be saved."

This was not true; but the thought of uttering this unanimous falsehood had risen to the mind of these two generous men at the same moment.

In a second De Launay, followed by Elie and Hullin, disappeared under the vaulted passage which led from the Bastille, amidst loud cries of "To the Hôtel de Ville! to the Hôtel de Ville!"

It was a singular spectacle to see this mournful and silent

monument, which for four centuries had been tenanted only by prisoners, their jailers, their guards, and a gloomy governor, now become the prey of the people, who ran through the courtyards, ascended and descended the staircases, buzzing like a swarm of flies, and filling this granite hive with noise and movement.

De Launay, a living prey, was to some of the victors of as great value as the dead prey, the captured Bastile.

Billot for a moment or two followed De Launay with his eyes, who was carried rather than led, and appeared to soar above the crowd.

But, as we have said, he soon disappeared. Billot heaved a sigh, looked around him, perceived Pitou, and rushed towards a tower, crying, —

“Third Bertaudière.”

A trembling jailer met him on his way.

“Third Bertaudière,” said Billot.

“This way, monsieur,” replied the jailer; “but I have not the keys.”

“Where are they?”

“They took them from me.”

“Citizen, lend me your hatchet,” said Billot, to one of the men from the Faubourg.

“I give it to you,” replied the latter; “I do not want it any more, since the Bastile is taken.”

Billot snatched the hatchet and ran up a staircase, conducted by the jailer.

The jailer stopped before a door.

“Third Bertaudière?” said the man, inquiringly.

“Yes.”

“This is it.”

“The prisoner confined in this room is Doctor Gilbert, is it not?”

“I do not know.”

“He was brought here only five or six days ago?”

“I do not know.”

“Well, then,” said Billot, “I shall soon know it.”

And he began chopping at the door with his hatchet.

The door was of oak, but it soon flew into splinters beneath the vigorous blows of the robust farmer.

In a few moments he had cut a hole through it, and could look into the room.

Billot placed his eye at the opening. Through it he could see the interior of the cell.

In the line of sunshine which penetrated into the dungeon through its grated window a man was standing, his head thrown rather backwards, holding in his hand one of the posts of his bedstead and in an attitude of defence.

This man had evidently prepared himself to knock down the first person who should enter his room.

Notwithstanding his long beard, notwithstanding his pallid countenance, notwithstanding his short-cut hair, Billot recognised him. It was Doctor Gilbert.

"Doctor! doctor!" cried Billot to him, "is it you?"

"Who is it that is calling me?" inquired the prisoner.

"T is I, — I, Billot, your friend."

"You, Billot?"

"Yes! yes! — he! he! — we! we!" cried the voices of twenty men, who had run into the passage on hearing the vigorous blows struck by Billot.

"But who are you?"

"We? — why, the conquerors of the Bastile. The Bastile is taken, — you are free."

"The Bastile is taken! I am free!" exclaimed the doctor.

And, passing both his hands through the opening, he shook the door so violently that the hinges and the lock appeared nearly yielding to his powerful pressure, and part of a panel, already loosened by Billot, broke off, and remained in the prisoner's hands.

"Wait, wait," said Billot, who was afraid that a second effort of so violent a nature would exhaust his strength, which had been overtaxed; "wait."

And he redoubled his blows.

And indeed, through the opening, which was every moment becoming wider, he could see the prisoner, who had seated himself upon his bench, pale as a spectre and incapable of raising the bedpost which was lying near him, and who but a few moments before, another Samson, seemed strong enough to shake down the walls of the Bastille.

"Billot! Billot!" murmured he.

"Yes, yes! and I also, my good doctor, — I, Pitou; you must remember poor Pitou, whom you placed at board with his Aunt Angelique, — Pitou, who has come to liberate you."

"But I can get through that hole," cried the doctor.

"No! no!" cried all the voices; "wait!"

All those present uniting their strength in one simultaneous effort, some slipping a crowbar between the door and the framework, others using a lever between the lock and door-post, and the remainder pushing with all the might of their shoulders or their hands, the oak gave a last cracking sound, the wall gave way, and all of them stumbled, one over another, into the room.

In a moment Gilbert found himself in the arms of Pitou and Billot.

Gilbert, the little country lad of the Château de Taverney, Gilbert, whom we left bathed in his blood in a cavern of the Azores, was now a man from thirty-four to thirty-five years old, of pale complexion, though he was not sickly, with black hair, eyes penetrating and fixed; never did his gaze lose itself in vacuity, never did it wander; when it was not fixed on some exterior object worthy to attract, it was fixed on his own thought, and became only more profound and more gloomy; his nose was straight, being attached to his forehead in a direct line; it rose above a lip of rather scornful expression, which, in the slight space between it and the nether lip, allowed one to perceive the dazzling enamel of his teeth. In ordinary times his dress was simple and grave, like that of a Quaker;

but this simplicity was closely allied to elegance from its extreme neatness. His height was somewhat above the medium stature, and he was well formed; as to his strength, we have just seen the feats it could perform when in a state of over-excitement, whether caused by anger or enthusiastic feeling.

Although in prison for five or six days, the doctor had paid the same attention to his person; his beard, which had grown some few lines, caused the paleness of his complexion to contrast favourably with its darkness, and indicated only a negligence which certainly was not the prisoner's, but his jailer's, who had refused to give him a razor, or to allow him to be shaved.

When he had pressed Billot and Pitou in his arms, he turned towards the crowd, who had filled his dungeon. Then, as if a moment had sufficed to restore all his self-possession, —

“The day which I had foreseen has then arrived,” said he. “Thanks to you, my friends, — thanks to the eternal genius which watches over the liberty of nations!”

And he held out both his hands to the men who had assisted Billot to break down the door, and who, recognising in him, from the dignity of his demeanour and his proud look, a man of superior genius, hardly dared to touch them.

On leaving the dungeon, he walked before all these men, leaning on Billot's shoulder, and followed by Pitou and his liberators.

The first moment had been devoted by Gilbert to friendship and to gratitude, the second had re-established the distance which existed between the learned doctor and the ignorant farmer, the warm-hearted Pitou, and the whole throng which had liberated him.

When he reached the door at the foot of the staircase, Gilbert stopped, on perceiving the broad sunshine which beamed full upon him. He paused, crossing his arms over his breast and raising his eyes to heaven: “Hail to thee,

lovely Liberty!" he exclaimed. "I saw thee spring to life in another world, and we are old friends. Hail to thee, lovely Liberty!"

And the smile of the doctor clearly said that the cries he then heard of a whole people inebriated with independence were no new thing to him.

Then, meditating for a few seconds, —

"Billot," said he, "the people, then, have vanquished despotism?"

"Yes, monsieur."

"And you came here to fight?"

"I came to liberate you."

"You knew, then, of my arrest?"

"Your son informed me of it this morning."

"Poor Sébastien! Have you seen him?"

"I have seen him."

"And he remained quietly at his school?"

"I left him struggling with four of the attendants of the infirmary."

"Is he ill? has he been delirious?"

"He wanted to come with us to fight."

"Ah!" ejaculated the doctor, and a smile of triumph passed over his features. His son had proved himself to be what he had hoped.

"And what did you say to him?" inquired the doctor.

"I said, since Doctor Gilbert is in the Bastille, let us take the Bastille; and now the Bastille is taken. But that is not all."

"What is there, then, besides?" asked the doctor.

"The casket has been stolen."

"The casket which I had confided to your care?"

"Yes."

"Stolen! and by whom?"

"By some men dressed in black, who came into my house under the pretext of seizing your pamphlets: they arrested me; locked me up in a room; they searched the house all over, found the casket, and carried it off."

"When did this happen?"

"Yesterday."

"Ho! ho! there is an evident connection between my arrest and this robbery. The person who caused my arrest at the same time had the casket stolen. Let me but know the person who originated my arrest, and I shall know who it was contrived the robbery. Where are the archives of the fortress?" continued the doctor, turning to the jailer.

"In the courtyard of the government house, sir," replied the jailer.

"Then to the archives, my friends! to the archives!" cried the doctor.

"Monsieur," said the jailer, stopping him, "let me go with you, or speak a word in my favour to these worthy people, that no harm may happen to me."

"Be it so," said Gilbert.

Then, addressing the crowd who surrounded him, and gazed at him with curiosity mingled with respect, —

"My friends," said he, "I recommend this worthy man to you; he only fulfilled his office in opening and shutting the prison doors; but he was kind towards the prisoners. Let no injury happen to him."

"No, no!" cried the crowd, with one accord, "no! — he need not fear; no harm shall be done to him. Let him come with us."

"I thank you, monsieur," said the jailer to the doctor; "but if you wish for anything in the archives, I advise you to move quickly, for I believe they are burning the papers."

"Oh, then there is not an instant to be lost," cried Gilbert; "to the archives!"

And he hastened towards the courtyard of the government house followed by the crowd, at the head of which were still Billot and Pitou.

CHAPTER XIX.

THE TRIANGLE.

ON reaching the door of the office in which the archives were kept, Gilbert perceived that a large heap of old papers was being burnt.

Unhappily, it is a general consequence that, after having obtained a victory, the first desire the people have to gratify is that of destruction.

The archives of the Bastile had been invaded.

This office was a vast hall, heaped up with registry books and plans; the documents relating to all the prisoners who had been confined in the Bastile during the last hundred years were confusedly enclosed in it.

The people tore these papers to pieces with senseless rage; it doubtless appeared to them that, by destroying these registrations of imprisonment, they were legally bestowing freedom on the prisoners.

Gilbert went into the hall; seconded by Pitou, he began to examine the register books which were still standing on the shelves; that of the running year was not to be found.

The doctor, a man who was always so cool and calm, turned pale and stamped with impatience.

At that moment Pitou caught sight of one of those heroic urchins who are always to be found in popular triumphs, who was carrying off on his head, and running with it towards the fire, a volume similar in shape and binding to that which Dr. Gilbert had been examining.

He ran after him, and, with his long legs, speedily overtook him.

It was the register of the year 1789.

The negotiation did not occupy much time. Pitou was considered as one of the leaders of the conquerors, and explained to the boy that a prisoner had occasion to use that register, and the urchin yielded up his prey to him, consoling himself with the observation, —

“It is all the same to me, I can burn another.”

Pitou opened the book, turned over the leaves, hunted through it, and on the last page found the words:

“This day, the 9th July, 1789, came in the Sieur G., a philosopher and political writer, a very dangerous person; to be kept in close and secret confinement.”

He carried the book to the doctor.

“Here, Monsieur Gilbert,” said he to him, “is not this what you are seeking for?”

“Oh!” cried the doctor joyfully, and, seizing hold of the book, “yes, that is it.”

And he read the words we have given above.

“And now,” said he, “let us see from whom the order emanated.”

And he examined the margin.

“Necker!” he exclaimed; “the order for my arrest signed by Necker, my friend Necker. Oh! most assuredly there must have been some foul plot!”

“Necker is your friend!” cried the crowd with respect, for it will be remembered that this name had great influence with the people.

“Yes, yes, my friends,” said the doctor, “I am convinced that Monsieur Necker did not know that I was in prison. But I will at once go to him.”

“Go to him, — and where?” inquired Billot.

“To Versailles, to be sure.”

“Monsieur Necker is not at Versailles; Monsieur Necker is exiled.”

“And where?”

“At Brussels.”

“But his daughter?”

"Ah! I know nothing of her," replied Billot.

"Their daughter is at their country-house, at Saint-Ouen," said a voice from the crowd.

"I am obliged to you," replied Gilbert, not knowing even to whom his thanks were addressed.

Then, turning towards those who were occupied in burning the papers, —

"My friends," he said, "in the name of history, which in these archives would find matter for the condemnation of tyrants, let me conjure you not to pursue this work of destruction; demolish the Bastille, stone by stone, that not a vestige, not a trace of it may remain, but respect the papers, respect the registers; the enlightenment of the future is contained in them."

The crowd had scarcely heard these words than, with its usual admirable intelligence, it duly weighed this reasoning.

"The doctor is right," cried a hundred voices; "no more devastation of these papers. Let us remove all these papers to the Hôtel de Ville."

A fireman, who, with a number of his companions, had dragged an engine into the courtyard on hearing the report that the governor was about to blow up the fortress, directed the pipe of his hose upon the burning pile, which, like that of Alexandria, was about to destroy the archives of a world, and in a few minutes it was extinguished.

"And at whose request were you arrested?" said Billot to Gilbert.

"Ah! that is precisely what I am endeavouring to discover and cannot ascertain; the name is left blank."

Then, after a moment's reflection, —

"But I will find it out," said he.

And tearing out the leaf on which the entry was made regarding him, he folded it up, and put it into his pocket. Then, addressing himself to Billot and Pitou, —

"My friends," said he, "let us leave this place; we have nothing further to do here."

"Well, let us go," replied Billot; "only it is a thing more easily talked about than done."

And in fact the crowd, urged into the interior courtyards by curiosity, were so closely packed that egress was almost impossible. And, to add to the difficulty, the other liberated prisoners were standing close to the principal gate.

Eight prisoners, including Gilbert, had been liberated that morning.

Their names were: Jean Bechade, Bernard Laroche, Jean Lacaurège, Antoine Pujade, De White, Le Comte de Solage, and Tavernier.

The first four inspired but little interest. They were accused of having forged a bill of exchange, without any proof whatsoever being brought against them, which led to the supposition that the charge against them was false; they had been only two years in the Bastile.

The Count de Solage was a man about thirty years of age, of joyous and expansive temperament. He embraced his liberators, congratulated them upon their victory, which he loudly extolled, and related to them the story of his captivity. He had been arrested in 1782, and imprisoned at Vincennes, his father having obtained a *lettre de cachet* against him, and was removed from that castle to the Bastile, where he had remained five years without ever having seen a judge, or having been examined even once. His father had been dead two years and no one had ever thought of him. If the Bastile had not been taken, it is probable that no one would have ever remembered that he was there.

De White was a man advanced in years, somewhere about sixty; he uttered strangely incoherent words, and with a foreign accent. To the questions which poured in upon him from all sides, he replied that he did not know how long he had been incarcerated, or what had been the cause of his arrest. He remembered that he was the cousin of Monsieur de Sartines, and that was all. One of the turn-

keys, whose name was Guyon, said that he had seen Monsieur de Sartines, on one occasion, go into White's cell, where he made him sign a power of attorney. But the prisoner had completely forgotten the circumstance.

Tavernier was the oldest of them all. He had been shut up for ten years in the Isle Sainte-Marguerite; thirty years had he been immured in the Bastile. He was upwards of ninety years old, with white hair and long white beard; his eyes had become dimmed by remaining so long in a dark cell, and he saw everything as through a cloud. When the crowd broke open his door, he could not comprehend what they wanted with him; when they spoke to him of liberty, he shook his head; then, afterwards, when they told him that the Bastile was taken, —

"Ho, ho!" cried he, "what will Louis XV., Madame de Pompadour, and the Duke de la Vrillière say to all this?"

Tavernier was not even mad; like De White, he had become an idiot.

The joy of these men was frightful to behold, for it cried aloud for vengeance, so much did it resemble terror. Two or three of them seemed almost expiring in the midst of the clamour raised by a hundred thousand voices. Poor men! they who, during the whole time of their confinement in the Bastile, had never heard two human voices speaking at the same moment; they who were no longer accustomed to any noises but the low and mysterious one of wood when warping with the damp; that of the spider, when unperceived he weaves his net with a ticking similar to that of an invisible pendulum, or of the affrighted rat, which gnaws and flies at the least stir.

At the moment that Gilbert made his appearance, the most enthusiastic among the crowd proposed that the prisoner should be carried in triumph, — a proposal which was unanimously adopted.

Gilbert would have much desired to avoid this species of ovation; but there was no means of escaping it; he had been at once recognised, as well as Billot and Pitou.

Cries of "To the Hôtel de Ville! to the Hôtel de Ville!" resounded on all sides, and Gilbert was raised in an instant on the shoulders of twenty persons.

In vain did the doctor resist, in vain did Billot and Pitou distribute among their victorious brethren the most vigorous fisticuffs; joy and enthusiasm had hardened the skins of the populace. These, and even blows given with pike-handles and the butt-ends of muskets, appeared only gentle caresses to the conquerors, and only served to redouble their delight.

Gilbert was therefore compelled to mount the triumphal car.

This car was formed of a square table, in the middle of which was stuck a lance to serve as a support to the victor, and enable him to preserve his balance.

The doctor therefore was raised above this sea of heads, which undulated from the Bastille to the Arcade Saint-Jean, a tempestuous sea whose waves were bearing, in the midst of pikes and bayonets, and arms of every description, of every form, and of every age, the triumphant prisoners.

But at the same time this terrible and irresistible ocean was rolling on another group, so compact and closely formed that it appeared an island. This group was the one which was leading away De Launay as a prisoner.

Around this group arose cries not less tumultuous nor less enthusiastic than those which accompanied the prisoners; but they were not shouts of triumph, they were threats of death.

Gilbert, from his elevated position, did not lose a single detail of this frightful spectacle.

He was the only one among all the prisoners that had been restored to liberty who was in the enjoyment of all his faculties. Five days of captivity were merely a dark spot in his life. His eyes had not been weakened or rendered dim by his short sojourn in the Bastille.

A combat generally does not have the effect of rendering the combatants pitiless except during the time that

it continues. Men generally, when issuing from a struggle in which they have risked their lives without receiving injury, are full of kindly feelings towards their enemies.

But in great popular commotions, such as those of which France has seen so many, from the times of the *Jacquerie* down to our own days, the masses whom fear has withheld from aiding in the fight, whom noise has irritated, the masses, at once ferocious and cowardly, endeavour, after the victory has been gained, to claim their share of the triumph which they had not dared to accelerate. They take their share in the vengeance.

From the moment of his leaving the Bastile, the procession was the commencement of the governor's execution.

Elie, who had taken the governor's life under his own responsibility, marched at the head of the group, protected by his uniform and by the admiration of the people, who had seen him one of the first to advance under the enemy's fire. He carried his sword above his head, on the point of which was the note which Monsieur de Launay had caused to be handed to the people through one of the loopholes of the Bastile.

After him came the guard of the royal taxes, holding in his hand the keys of the fortress; then Maillard, bearing the standard; and after him a young man carrying the regulations of the Bastile on his bayonet; an odious rescript by means of which so many bitter tears had flowed.

The governor walked next, protected by Hullin and two or three others, but who disappeared amid the throng of threatening fists, of waving sabres, and of quivering lances.

By the side of this group, and rolling onward in an almost parallel line with it in the great artery of the Rue Saint-Antoine, which leads from the Boulevard to the river, another could be distinguished, not less threatening, not less terrible than the first: it was that which was dragging forward Major de Losme, whom we have seen for a moment combating the will of the governor, and who at length had been compelled to bow down his head before the determination which De Launay had taken to defend himself.

Major de Losme was a worthy, brave, and excellent young man. Since he had been in the Bastile he had alleviated the sorrows of many of the prisoners by his kind treatment of them. But the people were ignorant of this. The people, from his brilliant uniform, imagined that he was the governor. Whereas the governor, thanks to his gray coat, on which there was no embroidery whatsoever, and from which he had torn the riband of the order of Saint-Louis, was surrounded as it were by a protecting doubt which could be dispelled by those only who were acquainted with his person.

Such was the spectacle which offered itself to the grieved eyes of Doctor Gilbert. His look, even in the midst of dangers, was always calm and observing, qualities which were inherent in his powerful organisation.

Hullin, on leaving the Bastile, had called around him his most trusty and devoted friends, the most valiant of the popular soldiers of that day, and four or five had responded to his call, and endeavoured to second him in his generous design of protecting the governor. Among them are three men of whom impartial history has consecrated the memory: their names were Arne, Chollat, and De Lépine.

These men, preceded as we have said by Hullin and Maillard, were therefore endeavouring to defend the life of one whose death a hundred thousand men were clamorously calling for.

Around them had ranged themselves some grenadiers of the French Guard, whose uniform, having become popular during the last two days, was an object of veneration to the people.

Monsieur de Launay had escaped receiving any blow as long as the arms of his generous defenders were able to ward them off; but he had not escaped insulting language and threats.

At the corner of the Rue de Jouy, of the five grenadiers of the French Guards who had joined the procession on leaving the Bastile, not one remained. They had one after

another been carried off on the way by the enthusiasm of the crowd, and perhaps also by the calculation of assassins, and Gilbert had seen them disappear one after another, like beads from a rosary of which the cord had been broken.

From that moment he had foreseen that the victory which had been gained was about to be tarnished by a sanguinary sacrifice; he had attempted to jump from the table which served him as a triumphal car, but arms of iron had riveted him to it. In his powerless position, he had directed Billot and Pitou to rush forward to defend the governor, and both of them, obedient to his voice, had made every effort to cleave through the human waves and get near to Monsieur de Launay.

And in fact the little group of his defenders stood in great need of a reinforcement. Chollat, who had not tasted food since the previous evening, had felt his strength giving way, and at length had fainted; it was with great difficulty that he had been raised and saved from being trampled under foot.

But this was a breach made in the wall, a falling in of the dike.

A man rushed through this breach, and, whirling the butt of his gun over his head, aimed a deadly blow at the uncovered head of the governor.

But De Lépine, who saw the terrific blow descending, had time enough to throw himself with outstretched arms between the governor and his assailant, and received on his forehead the blow intended for the governor.

Stunned by the shock, blinded with his own blood, which streamed into his eyes, he staggered, and covered his face with his hands, and when he could again see the governor was twenty paces from him.

It was at this moment that Billot, dragging Pitou after him through the crowd, came up to him.

He perceived that what exposed Monsieur de Launay above all to observation was his being the only man in the crowd who was bareheaded.

Billot took his hat, stretched out his arm, and placed it on the governor's head.

De Launay turned round and recognised Billot.

"I thank you," he said; "but whatever you may do, you will not save me."

"Let us only reach the Hôtel de Ville," said Hullin, "and I will answer for your safety."

"Yes," replied De Launay, "but shall we reach it?"

"With the help of God, we will attempt it," rejoined Hullin.

And in fact there was some hope of succeeding, for they were just entering the square before the Hôtel de Ville; but this square was thronged with men with naked arms, brandishing pikes and sabres. The report, which had flown from street to street, had announced to them that the governor and the major of the Bastille were being brought to them; and, like a pack of hungry hounds eager to be loosed upon their prey, they awaited, grinding their teeth and impatient for their approach.

As soon as they saw the procession approach they rushed towards the governor.

Hullin saw that this was the moment of extreme danger, of the last struggle; if he could only get the governor to the front steps, and get him to rush up the staircase, De Launay was saved.

"To me, Elie! — to me, Maillard! — to me, all men with hearts!" cried he; "our honour is at stake."

Elie and Maillard heard the appeal; they made a rush into the centre of the mob, and the people seconded them but too well; they made way for them to pass, but closed in behind them.

In this manner Elie and Maillard were separated from the principal group, and were prevented returning to it.

The crowd saw the advantage it had gained, and made a furious effort. Like an enormous boa, it entwined its gigantic folds around the group. Billot was lifted off his feet and dragged away; Pitou, who thought only of Billot

allowed himself to be forced away in the same throng. Hullin, being hurried on by the crowd, stumbled against the first step of the Hôtel de Ville, and fell. He got up, but it was to fall again almost immediately, and this time De Launay fell with him.

The governor was constant to the last; up to the final moment, he uttered not a single complaint; he did not ask for mercy, but he cried out in a loud, shrill tone, —

“Tigers that you are, at all events do not allow me to remain thus in suspense; kill me at once.”

Never was order more promptly executed than this reproachful request of the poor governor. In an instant, around the fallen De Launay every head was bowed down towards him. For a moment nothing could be seen but upraised and threatening hands, grasping poniards which as suddenly disappeared; then was seen a head severed from the body, which was raised, still streaming with blood, upon the end of a pike; the features had retained their livid and contemptuous smile.

This was the first.

Gilbert, from his elevated position, could see all that was passing; Gilbert had once more attempted to spring to the assistance of the governor, but two hundred arms prevented him.

He turned his head from the disgusting spectacle and sighed.

This head, with its staring eyes, was raised immediately in front, and as if to salute him with a last look, of the window in which De Flesselles was standing, surrounded and protected by the electors.

It would have been difficult to decide whether the face of the living or that of the dead man was the most pale and livid.

Suddenly, an immense uproar arose from the spot on which was lying the mutilated body of De Launay. His pockets had been searched by his assassins, and in his breast-pocket had been found the note which the Provost

of the Merchants had addressed to him, and which he had shown to De Losme.

This note, our readers may remember, was couched in the following terms:—

“Hold firm!—I amuse the Parisians with cockades and promises. Before the close of the day Monsieur de Bezenval will send you a reinforcement.

“DE FLESSELLES.”

The most blasphemous imprecations rose from the pavement of the square to the window of the Hôtel de Ville in which De Flesselles was standing.

Without guessing the cause of this new tumult, he fully comprehended the threat, and hastily drew back from the window. But he had been seen, every one knew that he was there; the crowd rushed up the staircase, and this time the movement was so universal that the men who had been carrying Doctor Gilbert abandoned him to follow the living tide which was overflowing the great staircase.

Gilbert would also have gone into the Hôtel de Ville, not to threaten, but to protect Flesselles. He had already ascended three or four of the front steps, when he felt himself violently pulled back. He turned round to disengage himself from this new obstruction, but he recognised Billot and Pitou.

“Oh!” exclaimed Gilbert, who from his commanding position could glance over the whole square, “what can they be doing yonder?”

And he pointed with his convulsively clenched hand to the corner of the Rue de la Tixeranderie.

“Come with us, doctor, come!” simultaneously cried Billot and Pitou.

“Oh! the assassins!” cried the doctor, “the assassins!”

And indeed at that moment Major de Losme fell, killed by a desperate blow from a hatchet,—the people confounding in their rage the egotistical and barbarous governor,

who had been the persecutor of his prisoners, with the generous man who had been their friend and reliever.

"Oh! yes, yes," said he, "let us be gone, for I begin to be ashamed of having been liberated by such men."

"Doctor," said Billot, "be not uneasy on that score. The men who fought down yonder are not the same men who are committing these horrid massacres."

But at the moment when the doctor was about to descend the steps which he had gone up to hasten to the assistance of Flesselles, the flood which had poured into the building was again vomited forth. Amid the torrent of men was one who was struggling furiously as they dragged him forward.

"To the Palais Royal! to the Palais Royal!" cried the crowd.

"Yes, my friends,—yes, my good friends,—to the Palais Royal!" repeated the man.

And they went towards the river, as if this human inundation had wished, not to bear him towards the Palais Royal, but to drag him towards the Seine.

"Oh!" cried Gilbert, "here is another they are about to murder! Let us endeavour to save him at least." But scarcely had he pronounced these words when a pistol-shot was heard, and De Flesselles disappeared amid the smoke.

Gilbert covered his eyes with both his hands, with a gesture of excessive anger; he cursed the people who, after having shown themselves so great, had not the firmness to remain pure, and had sullied the victory they had gained by a triple assassination.

Then, when he removed his hands from his eyes, he saw three heads raised above the crowd, on three pikes.

The first was that of De Flesselles, the second that of De Losme, the third that of De Launay.

The one rose above the front steps of the Hôtel de Ville, the other from the middle of the Rue de la Tixéranderie, the third on the Quay Pelletier.

From their relative positions they assumed the form of a triangle.

"Oh Balsamo ! Balsamo !" murmured the doctor, with a sigh ; "is it then such a triangle as this that is to be symbolical of liberty !"

And he ran along the Rue de la Vannerie, Billot and Pitou accompanying him.

CHAPTER XX.

SÉBASTIEN GILBERT.

At the corner of the Rue Planche-Mibray the doctor met a hackney coach, made a sign to the coachman to stop, and hastily got into it.

Billot and Pitou quickly followed him.

"To the College of Louis-le-Grand!" cried Gilbert, and threw himself into one corner of the vehicle, where he fell into a profound reverie, which was respected by Billot and Pitou.

They went over the Pont au Change by the Rue de la Cité, the Rue Saint-Jacques, and at length reached the College Louis-le-Grand.

All Paris was trembling with emotion. The news had spread rapidly throughout the city; rumours of the assassinations on the Place de la Grève were mingled with the glorious recital of the taking of the Bastile. On every face could be seen depicted the various emotions to which the news gave rise, according to the varied feelings they excited, — the lightnings of the soul which thus betrayed themselves.

Gilbert had not once looked out of the coach window, — Gilbert had not uttered a single word. There is always a ridiculous side in popular ovations, and Gilbert contemplated his ovation in that point of view.

And besides, it also appeared to him that, notwithstanding all he had done to prevent it, some drops of the blood which had been shed would fall upon his head.

The doctor alighted from the hackney coach at the college gate, and made a sign to Billot to follow him.

As to Pitou, he discreetly remained in the coach.

Sébastien was still in the infirmary; the principal, in person, on Dr. Gilbert's being announced, conducted him thither.

Billot, who although not a very acute observer, well knew the character of both father and son, — Billot attentively examined the scene which was passing before his eyes.

Weak, irritable, and nervous as the boy had shown himself in the moment of despair, he evinced an equal degree of tranquillity and reserve in the moment of joy.

On perceiving his father he turned pale, and words failed him. A slight trembling shook his legs, and then he ran and threw his arms round his father's neck, uttering a cry of joy, which resembled a cry of grief, and then held him silently clasped within his arms.

The doctor responded as silently to this mute pressure; only, after having embraced his son, he looked at him with an expression that was more sorrowful than joyous.

A more skilful observer than Billot would have said that some misfortune or some crime existed in the relations between that youth and that man.

The youth was less reserved in his conduct towards Billot. When he could observe any one excepting his father, who had in the first moment engrossed all his attention, he ran to the good farmer, and threw his arms round his neck, saying, —

"You are a worthy man, Monsieur Billot; you have kept your promise to me, and I thank you for it."

"Yes, yes," replied Billot, "and it was not without some trouble, I can assure you, Monsieur Sébastien. Your father was very nicely and safely locked up, and it was necessary to do a tolerable deal of damage before we could get him out."

"Sébastien," inquired the doctor, with some anxiety, "you are in good health?"

"Yes, father," replied the young man, "although you find me here in the infirmary."

Gilbert smiled.

“I know why it was you were brought here,” said he.
The boy smiled in his turn.

“Have you everything you require here?” continued the doctor.

“Everything, — thanks to you.”

“I shall then, my dear boy, still recommend to you the same, the only line of conduct, — study assiduously.”

“Yes, father.”

“I know that to you the word ‘study’ is not a vain and monotonous word; if I believed it to be so, I would no longer say it.”

“Father, it is not for me to reply to you on that head; it is the province of Monsieur Bérardier, our excellent principal.”

The doctor turned towards Monsieur Bérardier, who made a sign that he had something to say to him.

“I will speak to you again in a moment, Sébastien,” said the doctor.

And he went over to the principal.

“Monsieur,” said Sébastien, with anxious feeling, to Billot, “can anything unfortunate have happened to Pitou? The poor lad is not with you.”

“He is at the door, in a hackney coach,” replied Billot.

“Father,” said Sébastien, “will you allow Monsieur Billot to fetch Pitou to me? I should be very glad to see him.”

Gilbert gave an affirmative nod; Billot left the room.

“What is it you would say to me?” inquired Gilbert of the Abbé Bérardier.

“I wished to tell you, monsieur, that it is not study that you should recommend to the young man, but, on the contrary, to amuse himself.”

“And on what account, good abbé?”

“Yes, he is an excellent young man, whom everybody here loves as a son or as a brother, but —”

The abbé paused.

“But what?” cried Gilbert, with anxiety.

"But if great care be not taken, Monsieur Gilbert, there is something that will kill him."

"And what is that?" said Gilbert.

"The study which you so strongly recommend to him."

"Study?"

"Yes, monsieur, study. If you could but see him seated at his desk, his arms crossed, poring over his dictionary, with eyes fixed —"

"Studying or dreaming?" asked Gilbert.

"Studying, monsieur; endeavouring to find a good expression, — the antique style, the Greek or Latin form, — seeking for it for hours together; and see, even at this very moment, look at him!"

And indeed the young man, although it was not five minutes since his father had been speaking to him, although Billot had scarcely shut the door after him, Sébastien had fallen into a reverie which seemed closely allied to ecstasy.

"Is he often thus?" anxiously inquired Gilbert.

"Monsieur, I could almost say that this is his habitual state; only see how deeply he is meditating."

"You are right, monsieur; and when you observe him in this state, you should endeavour to divert his thoughts."

"And yet it would be a pity, for the results of these meditations are compositions which will one day do great honour to the College Louis-le-Grand. I predict that in three years from this time that youth yonder will bear off all the prizes at our examination."

"Take care," replied the doctor; "this species of absorption of thought in which you see Sébastien now plunged is rather a proof of weakness than of strength, a symptom rather of malady than of health. You are right, Monsieur Principal; it will not do to recommend assiduous application to that child, or at least we must know how to distinguish study from such a state of reverie."

"Monsieur, I can assure you that he is studying."

"What, as we see him now?"

"Yes; and the proof is that his task is always finished

before that of the other scholars. Do you see how his lips move? He is repeating his lessons."

"Well, then, whenever he is repeating his lessons in this manner, Monsieur Bérardier, divert his attention from them. He will not know his lessons the worse for it, and his health will be better for it."

"Do you think so?"

"I am sure of it."

"Well," cried the good abbé, "you ought to understand these matters, — you, whom Messieurs de Condorcet and Cabanis proclaim to be one of the most learned men now existing in the world."

"Only," rejoined Gilbert, "when you wish to draw him out of such reveries, you must do it with much precaution. Speak to him very softly in the first instance, and then louder."

"And why so?"

"To bring him gradually back to this world, which his mind has left."

The abbé looked at the doctor with astonishment. It would not have required much to make him believe that he was mad.

"Observe," continued the doctor; "you shall see the proof of what I am saying to you."

Billot and Pitou entered the room at this moment. In three strides Pitou was at the side of the dreaming youth.

"You asked for me, Sébastien?" said Pitou to him; "that was very kind of you."

And he placed his large head close to the pale face of the young lad.

"Look!" said Gilbert, seizing the abbé's arm.

And indeed Sébastien, thus abruptly aroused from his reverie by the cordial affection of Pitou, staggered, his face became more vividly pale, his head fell on one side, as if his neck had not sufficient strength to support it, a painful sigh escaped his breast, and then the blood again rushed to his face.

He shook his head and smiled.

"Ah, it is you, Pitou! Yes; that is true, — I asked for you."

And then, looking at him, —

"You have been fighting, then?"

"Yes, and like a brave lad too," said Billot.

"Why did you not take me with you?" said the child, in a reproachful tone. "I would have fought also, and then I should at least have done something for my father."

"Sébastien," said Gilbert, going to his son, and pressing his head to his breast, "you can do much more for your father than to fight for him; you can listen to his advice, and follow it, — become a distinguished and celebrated man."

"As you are?" said the boy, with proud emotion. "Oh! it is that which I aspire to."

"Sébastien," said the doctor, "now that you have embraced both Billot and Pitou, our good friends, will you come into the garden with me for a few minutes, that we may have a little talk together?"

"With great delight, father. Only two or three times in my whole life have I been alone with you, and those moments, with all their details, are always present in my memory."

"You will allow us, good Monsieur Principal?" said Gilbert.

"How can you doubt it?"

"Billot and Pitou, you must, my friends, stand in need of some refreshment?"

"Upon my word, I do," said Billot. "I have eaten nothing since the morning, and I believe that Pitou has fasted as long as I have."

"I beg your pardon," replied Pitou; "I ate a crumb of bread and two or three sausages just the moment before I dragged you out of the water; but a bath always makes one hungry."

"Well, then, come to the refectory," said the Abbé Bérardier, "and you shall have some dinner."

"Ho, ho!" cried Pitou.

"You are afraid of our college fare!" cried the abbé; "but do not alarm yourselves; you shall be treated as invited guests. Moreover, it appears to me," continued the abbé, "that it is not alone your stomach that is in a dilapidated state, my dear Monsieur Pitou."

Pitou cast a look replete with modesty on his own person.

"And that if you were offered a pair of breeches as well as a dinner —"

"The fact is, I would accept them, good Monsieur Bérardier," replied Pitou.

"Well, then, come with me; both the breeches and the dinner are at your service."

And he led off Billot and Pitou by one door, while Gilbert and his son, waving their hands to them, went out at another.

The latter crossed a yard which served as a playground to the young collegians, and went into a small garden reserved for the professors, — a cool and shady retreat, in which the venerable Abbé Bérardier was wont to read his Tacitus and his Juvenal.

Gilbert seated himself upon a bench, overshadowed by an alcove of clematis and virgin vines; then, drawing Sébastien close to him, and parting the long hair which fell upon his forehead, —

"Well, my child," said he, "we are then once more united."

Sébastien raised his eyes to heaven.

"Yes, father, and by a miracle performed by God."

Gilbert smiled.

"If there be any miracle," said Gilbert, "it was the brave people of Paris who have accomplished it."

"My father," said the boy, "set not God aside in all that has just occurred; for I, when I saw you come in, instinctively offered my thanks to God for your deliverance."

"And Billot?"

"Billot I thanked after thanking God."

Gilbert reflected.

"You are right, child," said he; "God is in everything. But now let us talk of yourself, and let us have some little conversation before we again separate."

"Are we, then, to be again separated, father?"

"Not for a long time, I presume. But a casket containing some very precious documents has disappeared from Billot's house at the same time that I was arrested and sent to the Bastille. I must therefore endeavour to discover who it was that caused my imprisonment, — who has carried off the casket."

"It is well, father. I will wait to see you again — till your inquiries shall be completed."

And the boy sighed deeply.

"You are sorrowful, Sébastien?" said the doctor, inquiringly.

"Yes."

"And why are you sorrowful?"

"I do not know. It appears to me that life has not been shaped for me as it has been for other children."

"What are you saying there, Sébastien?"

"The truth."

"Explain yourself."

"They all have amusements, pleasures, while I have none."

"You have no amusements, no pleasures?"

"I mean to say, father, that I take no pleasure in those games which form the amusement of boys of my own age."

"Take care, Sébastien; I should much regret that you should be of such a disposition. Sébastien, minds that give promise of a glorious future are like good fruits during their growth: they have their bitterness, their acidity, their greenness, before they can delight the palate by their matured full flavour. Believe me, my child, it is good to have been young."

"It is not my fault if I am not so," replied the young man, with a melancholy smile.

Gilbert pressed both his son's hands within his own, and, fixing his eye intently upon Sébastien's, continued,—

"Your age, my son, is that of the seed when germinating; nothing should yet appear above the surface of all that study has sown in you. At the age of fourteen, Sébastien, gravity is either pride, or it proceeds from malady. I have asked you whether your health was good, and you replied affirmatively. I am going to ask you whether you are proud; try to reply to me that you are not."

"Father," said the boy, "on that head you need not be alarmed. That which renders me so gloomy is neither sickness nor pride, — no, it is a settled grief."

"A settled grief, poor child! And what grief, good Heaven! can you have at your age? Come, now, speak out!"

"No, father, no; some other time. You have told me that you were in a hurry; you have only a quarter of an hour to devote to me. Let us speak of other things than my follies."

"No, Sébastien, I should be uneasy were I to leave you so. Tell me whence proceeds your grief."

"In truth, father, I do not dare."

"What do you fear?"

"I fear that in your eyes I shall appear a visionary, or perhaps that I may speak to you of things that will afflict you."

"You afflict me much more by withholding your secret from me."

"You well know that I have no secrets from you, father."

"Speak out, then."

"Really, I dare not."

"Sébastien, you, who have the pretension of being a man, to —"

"It is precisely for that reason."

"Come, now, take courage."

"Well, then, father, it is a dream."

"A dream which terrifies you?"

"Yes and no; for when I am dreaming I am not terrified, but as if transported into another world."

"Explain yourself."

"When still quite a child I had these visions. You cannot but remember that two or three times I lost myself in those great woods which surround the village in which I was brought up?"

"Yes, I remember being told of it."

"Well, then, at those times I was following a species of phantom."

"What say you?" cried Gilbert, looking at his son with an astonishment that seemed closely allied to terror.

"Well, then, father, I will tell you all. I used to play, as did the other children in the village. As long as there were children with me, or near me, I saw nothing; but if I separated from them, or went beyond the last village garden, I felt something near, like the rustling of a gown. I would stretch out my arms to catch it, and I embraced only the air; but as the rustling sound became lost in distance, the phantom itself became visible. It was at first a vapour as transparent as a cloud; then the vapour became more condensed, and assumed a human form. The form was that of a woman, gliding along the ground rather than walking, and becoming more and more visible as it plunged into the shady parts of the forest. Then an unknown, extraordinary, and almost irresistible power impelled me to pursue this form. I pursued her with outstretched arms, mute as herself; for often I attempted to call to her, and never could my tongue articulate a sound. I pursued her thus, although she never stopped, although I never could come up with her, until the same prodigy which announced her presence to me warned me of her departure. This woman vanished gradually from my sight, matter became once more vapour, the vapour became volatilised,

and all was ended; and I, exhausted with fatigue, would fall down on the spot where she had disappeared. It was there that Pitou would find me, sometimes the same day, but sometimes only the next morning."

Gilbert continued gazing at his son with increasing anxiety; he had placed his fingers on his pulse. Sébastien at once comprehended the feeling which agitated the doctor.

"Oh! do not be uneasy, father," said he. "I know that there was nothing real in all this; I know that it was a vision, and nothing more."

"And this woman," inquired the doctor, "what was her appearance?"

"Oh! as majestic as a queen."

"And her face, did you sometimes see it, child?"

"Yes."

"And how long ago?" asked Gilbert, shuddering.

"Only since I have been here," replied the youth.

"But here in Paris you have not the forest of Villers-Cotterêts, the tall trees forming a dark and mysterious arch of verdure. At Paris you have no longer that silence, that solitude, the natural element of phantoms."

"Yes, father, I have all these."

"Where, then?"

"Here, in this garden."

"What mean you by saying here? Is not this garden set apart for the professors?"

"It is so, my father; but two or three times it appeared to me that I saw this woman glide from the courtyard into the garden, and each time I would have followed her, but the closed door always prevented me. Then one day the Abbé Bérardier, being highly satisfied with my composition, asked me if there was anything I particularly desired; and I asked him to allow me sometimes to walk in the garden with him. He gave me the permission. I came, and here, father, the vision reappeared to me."

Gilbert trembled.

"Strange hallucination," said he; "but, nevertheless, very possible in a temperament so highly nervous as his. And you have seen her face, then?"

"Yes, father."

"Do you remember it?"

The youth smiled.

"Did you ever attempt to go near her?"

"Yes."

"To hold out your hand to her?"

"It was then that she would disappear."

"And, in your own opinion, Sébastien, who is this woman?"

"It appears to me that she is my mother."

"Your mother!" exclaimed Gilbert, turning pale.

And he pressed his hand against his heart, as if to stop the bleeding of a painful wound.

"But this is all a dream," cried he; "and really I am almost as mad as you are."

The youth remained silent, and looked at his father.

"Well?" said the latter, in the accent of inquiry.

"Well," replied Sébastien, "it is possible that it may be all a dream; but the reality of my dream is no less existing."

"What say you?"

"I say that at the last Festival of Pentecost, when we were taken to walk in the wood of Satory, near Versailles, and that while there, as I was dreaming under a tree, and separated from my companions —"

"The same vision again appeared to you?"

"Yes; but this time in a carriage, drawn by four magnificent horses. But this time real, absolutely living. I very nearly fainted."

"And why so?"

"I do not know."

"And what impression remained upon your mind from this new vision?"

"That it was not my mother whom I had seen appearing

to me in a dream, since this woman was the same I always saw in my vision, and my mother is dead."

Gilbert rose, and pressed his hand to his forehead. A strange swimming of the head had just seized him.

The young lad remarked his agitation, and was alarmed at his sudden paleness.

"Ah!" said he, "you see now, father, how wrong I was to relate to you all my follies."

"No, my child, no. On the contrary," said the doctor, "speak of them often to me; speak of them to me every time you see me, and we will endeavour to cure you of them."

Sébastien shook his head.

"Cure me! and for what?" asked he. "I have been accustomed to this dream; it has become a portion of my existence. I love that vision, although it flies from me, and sometimes seems to repel me. Do not, therefore, cure me of it, father. You may again leave me, travel once more, perhaps go again to America. Having that vision, I am not completely alone in the world."

"In fine," murmured the doctor, and pressing Sébastien to his breast, "till we meet again, my child," said he; "and then I hope we shall no more leave each other; for should I again leave France, I will at least endeavour to take you with me."

"Was my mother beautiful?" asked the child.

"Oh, yes, very beautiful!" replied the doctor, in a voice almost choked by emotion.

"And did she love you as much as I love you?"

"Sébastien! Sébastien! never speak to me of your mother!" cried the doctor.

And, pressing his lips for the last time to the forehead of the youth, he rushed out of the garden.

Instead of following him, the child fell back, overcome by his feelings, on the bench.

In the courtyard Gilbert found Billot and Pitou, completely invigorated by the good cheer they had partaken

of. They were relating to the Abbé Bérardier all the circumstances regarding the capture of the Bastille.

Gilbert again entered into conversation with the Abbé Bérardier, in which he pointed out to him the line of conduct he should observe with regard to Sébastien.

He then got into the hackney coach with his two companions.

CHAPTER XXI.

MADAME DE STAËL.

WHEN Gilbert resumed his place in the hackney coach by the side of Billot, and opposite to Pitou, he was pale, and the perspiration was standing in large drops on his forehead.

But it was not in the nature of this man to remain for any time overwhelmed by any emotion whatsoever. He threw himself back into the corner of the carriage, pressed both his hands to his forehead, as if he wished to repress the boiling thoughts which raged within it, and, after remaining a few moments motionless, he withdrew his hands, and instead of an agitated countenance he exhibited features which were particularly calm.

"You told me, I think, my dear Monsieur Billot, that the king had dismissed Monsieur de Necker?"

"Yes, indeed, Monsieur Gilbert."

"And that the commotions in Paris originated in some measure from the disgrace of the minister?"

"Very much."

"And you added that Monsieur de Necker had immediately left Versailles."

"He received the king's letter while at dinner. In an hour afterwards he was on the road to Brussels."

"Where he is now?"

"Or ought to be."

"Did you not hear it said that he had stopped somewhere on the road?"

"Oh, yes; he stopped at Saint-Ouen, in order to take leave of his daughter, the Baroness de Staël."

"Did Madame de Staël go with him?"

"I have been told that he and his wife only set out for Brussels."

"Coachman!" cried Gilbert, "stop at the first tailor's shop you see."

"You wish to change your coat?" said Billot.

"Yes. In good sooth, this one smells too much of its contact with the walls of the Bastile; and a man cannot in such a dress discreetly pay a visit to the daughter of an ex-minister in disgrace. Search your pockets, and see if you cannot find a few louis for me."

"Ho, ho!" cried the farmer, "it seems that you have left your purse in the Bastile."

"That is according to the regulations," said Gilbert, smiling. "All articles of value are deposited in the registry office."

"And they remain there," said the farmer.

And opening his huge fist, which contained about twenty louis, —

"Take these, doctor," said he.

Gilbert took ten louis. Some minutes afterwards the hackney coach stopped at the door of a ready-made clothes shop.

It was still the usage in those days.

Gilbert changed his coat, soiled by the walls of the Bastile, for a very decent black one, such as was worn by the gentlemen of the Tiers Etat in the National Assembly.

A hair-dresser in his shop, a Savoyard shoe-cleaner in his cellar, completed the doctor's toilette.

The doctor then ordered the coachman to drive him to Saint-Ouen, by the exterior Boulevards, which they reached by going behind the walls of the park at Monceaux.

Gilbert alighted at the gate of Monsieur Necker's house at the moment when the cathedral clock of Dagobert struck seven in the evening.

Around this house, which erewhile was so much sought, so much frequented, reigned the most profound silence, disturbed only by the arrival of Gilbert.

And yet there was none of that melancholy appearance which generally surrounds abandoned country-houses, — of that gloominess even generally visible in a mansion, the master of which has been disgraced.

The gates being closed, the garden walks deserted, merely announced that the master was absent, but there was no trace of misfortune or of precipitation.

Besides this, one whole portion of the chateau, the east wing, had still its window shutters open, and when Gilbert was advancing towards this side, a servant, wearing the livery of Monsieur de Necker, approached the visitor.

The following dialogue then took place through the iron gratings of the gate.

“Monsieur de Necker is not at home, my friend?” said Gilbert.

“No; the baron left Saint-Ouen last Saturday, for Brussels.”

“And her ladyship, the baroness?”

“Went with monsieur.”

“But Madame de Staël?”

“Madame de Staël has remained here. But I do not know whether madame will receive any one; it is her hour for walking.”

“Please to point out to me where she is, and announce to her Doctor Gilbert.”

“I will go and inquire whether madame is in the house or not. Doubtless she will receive you, monsieur; but should she be taking a walk, my orders are that she is not to be disturbed.”

“Very well; go quickly, I beg of you.”

The servant opened the gate, and Gilbert entered the grounds.

While relocking the gate, the servant cast an inquisitorial glance on the vehicle which had brought the doctor, and on the extraordinary faces of his two travelling companions; then he went off, shaking his head, like a man who feels somewhat perplexed, but who defies any other intellect to

see clear into a matter where his own had been altogether puzzled.

Gilbert remained alone, waiting his return.

In about five minutes the servant reappeared.

"The Baroness de Staël is taking a walk," said he, and he bowed in order to dismiss Gilbert.

But the doctor was not so easily to be got rid of.

"My friend," said he, "be pleased to make a slight infraction in your orders, and tell the baroness, when you announce me to her, that I am a friend of the Marquis de Lafayette."

A louis, slipped into the lackey's hands, completely removed the scruples he had entertained, but which the name of the marquis had nearly half dispelled.

"Come in, monsieur," said the servant.

Gilbert followed him; but instead of taking him into the house, he led him into the park.

"This is the favourite side of the baroness," said the lackey to Gilbert, pointing out to him the entrance to a species of labyrinth; "will you remain here a moment?"

Ten minutes afterwards he heard a rustling among the leaves, and a woman, between twenty-three and twenty-four years of age, and of a figure rather noble than graceful, appeared to the eyes of Gilbert.

She seemed surprised on finding a man who still appeared young, when she had doubtless expected to meet one advanced in years.

Gilbert was a man of sufficiently remarkable appearance to strike at first sight so able an observer as Madame de Staël.

The features of few men were formed with such pure lines, and these lines had assumed, by the exercise of an all-powerful will, a character of extraordinary inflexibility. His fine black eyes, which were always so expressive, had become somewhat veiled by his literary labours and the sufferings he had undergone, and had lost a portion of that mobility which is one of the charms of youth.

A wrinkle, which was at once deep and graceful, hollowed out at the corner of his thin lips that mysterious cavity in which physiognomists place the seat of circumspection. It appeared that time alone, and a precocious old age had given to Gilbert that quality with which nature had neglected to endow him. A wide and well-rounded forehead, slightly receding towards the roots of his fine black hair, which for years powder had no longer whitened, gave evidence at once of knowledge and of thought, of study and of imagination. With Gilbert, as with his master, Rousseau, his prominent eyebrows threw a deep shade over his eyes, and from this shade glanced forth the luminous point which revealed life.

Gilbert, notwithstanding his unassuming dress, presented himself before the future authoress of "Corinne" with a remarkably dignified and distinguished air, — an air of which his well-shaped, tapering white hands, his small feet, and his finely formed and muscular legs, completed the noble appearance.

Madame de Staël devoted some moments to examining Gilbert.

During this, Gilbert, on his side, had given a stiff sort of bow, which slightly recalled the modest civility of the American Quakers, who grant to women only the fraternity which protects, instead of the respect which smiles.

Then, with a rapid glance, he in his turn analysed the person of the already celebrated young woman, whose intelligent and expressive features were altogether devoid of beauty; it was the head of an insignificant and frivolous youth, rather than that of a woman, but which surmounted a form of voluptuous luxuriance.

She held in her hand a twig from a pomegranate tree, from which, from absence of mind, she was biting off the blossoms.

"Is it you, monsieur," inquired the baroness, "who are Doctor Gilbert."

"Yes, madame, my name is Gilbert."

"You are very young to have acquired so great a reputation, or rather does not that reputation appertain to your father, or to some relation older than yourself?"

"I do not know any one of the name of Gilbert but myself, madame. And if indeed there is, as you say, some slight degree of reputation attached to the name, I have a fair right to claim it."

"You made use of the name of the Marquis de Lafayette in order to obtain this interview with me, monsieur; and, in fact, the Marquis has spoken to us of you, of your inexhaustible knowledge—"

Gilbert bowed.

"A knowledge which is so much the more remarkable, and so much the more replete with interest," continued the baroness, "since it appears that you are not a mere ordinary chemist, a practitioner, like so many others, but that you have sounded all the mysteries of the science of life."

"I clearly perceive, madame, that the Marquis de Lafayette must have told you that I am somewhat of a sorcerer," replied Gilbert, smiling; "and if he has told you so, I know that he has talent enough to prove it to you, had he wished to do so."

"In fact, monsieur, he has spoken to us of the marvelous cures you often performed, whether on the field of battle or in the American hospitals, upon patients whose lives were altogether despaired of; you plunged them, the general told us, into a factitious death, which so much resembled death itself that it was difficult to believe it was not real."

"That factitious death, madame, is the result of a science almost still unknown, now confided only to the hands of some few adepts, but which will soon become common."

"It is mesmerism you are speaking of, is it not?" asked Madame de Staël, with a smile.

"Of mesmerism, yes, that is it."

"Did you take lessons of the master himself?"

"Alas! madame, Mesmer himself was only a scholar.

Mesmerism, or rather, magnetism, was an ancient science, known to the Egyptians and the Greeks. It was lost in the ocean of the Middle Ages. Shakespeare divined it in *Macbeth*. Urbain Grandier found it once more, and died for having found it. But the great master — my master — was the Count de Cagliostro."

"That mountebank!" cried Madame de Staël.

"Madame, madame, beware of judging as do contemporaries, and not as posterity will judge! To that mountebank I owe my knowledge, and perhaps the world will be indebted to him for its liberty."

"Be it so," replied Madame de Stael, again smiling; "I speak without knowing, — you speak with full knowledge of the subject. It is probable that you are right, and that I am wrong. But let us return to you. Why is it that you have so long kept yourself at so great a distance from France? Why have you not returned to take your place, your proper station, among the great men of the age, such as Lavoisier, Cabanis, Condorcet, Bailly, and Louis?"

At this last name Gilbert blushed, though almost imperceptibly.

"I have yet too much to study, madame, to rank myself all at once among these great masters."

"But you have come at last, though at an unpropitious moment for us. My father, who would, I feel assured, have been happy to be of service to you, has been disgraced, and left here three days ago."

Gilbert smiled.

"Baroness," said he, bowing slightly, "it is now only six days ago that I was imprisoned in the Bastille, pursuant to an order from Baron Necker."

Madame de Stael blushed in her turn.

"Really, monsieur, you have just told me something that greatly surprises me. You in the Bastille!"

"Myself, madame."

"What had you done to occasion your imprisonment?"

"Those alone who threw me into prison can tell that."

"But you are no longer in prison "

"No, madame, because the Bastille no longer exists."

"How can that be? — does the Bastille no longer exist?" cried Madame de Staël, feigning astonishment.

"Did you not hear the firing of cannon?"

"Yes; but cannons are only cannons, that is all."

"Oh! permit me to tell you, madame, that it is impossible that Madame de Staël, the daughter of Monsieur de Necker, should not know at this present time that the Bastille has been taken by the people."

"I assure you, monsieur," replied the baroness, somewhat confused, "that being unacquainted with any of the events which have taken place since the departure of my father, I no longer occupy my time but in deploring his absence."

"Madame! madame!" said Gilbert, shaking his head, "the State messengers are so familiar with the road that leads to the chateau of Saint-Ouen that at least one bearer of despatches must have arrived during the four hours that have elapsed since the capitulation of the Bastille."

The baroness saw that it was impossible for her to deny it without positively lying. She abhorred a falsehood; she therefore changed the subject of the conversation.

"And to what lucky event do I owe your visit, monsieur?" asked she.

"I wished to have the honour of speaking to Monsieur de Necker, madame."

"But do you know that he is no longer in France?"

"Madame, it appeared to me so extraordinary that Monsieur de Necker should be absent, so impolitic that he should not have watched the course of events —"

"That —"

"That I relied upon you, I must confess, madame, to tell me where I could find him."

"You will find him at Brussels, monsieur."

Gilbert fixed a scrutinising gaze upon the baroness.

"Thank you, madame," said he, bowing; "I shall then

set out for Brussels, as I have matters of the highest importance to communicate to him."

Madame de Staël appeared to hesitate, then she rejoined:—

"Fortunately I know you, monsieur," said she, "and know you to be a man of serious character. 'Tis true, important things might lose a great deal of their value by passing through other lips. But what can there be of importance to my father after his disgrace,—after what has taken place?"

"There is the future, madame; and perhaps I shall not be altogether without influence over the future. But all these reflections are to no purpose. The most important thing for me, and for him, is, that I should see Monsieur de Necker. Thus, madame, you say that he is at Brussels?"

"Yes, monsieur."

"It will take me twenty hours to go there. Do you know what twenty hours are during a revolution, and how many important events may take place during twenty hours? Oh! how imprudent it was for Monsieur de Necker, madame, to place twenty hours between himself and any event which might take place,—between the hand and the object it desires to reach."

"In truth, monsieur, you frighten me," said Madame de Staël, "and I begin to think that my father has really been imprudent."

"But what would you have, madame? Things are thus, are they not? I have, therefore, merely to make you a most humble apology for the trouble that I have given you. Adieu, madame."

But the baroness stopped him.

"I tell you, monsieur, that you alarm me," she rejoined; "you owe me an explanation of all this; you must tell me something that will reassure me."

"Alas! madame," replied Gilbert, "I have so many private interests to watch over at this moment, that it is

impossible for me to think of those of others; my life and honour are at stake, as would be the life and honour of Monsieur de Necker if he could take advantage of the words which I shall tell him in the course of twenty hours."

"Monsieur, allow me to remember something that I have too long forgotten, — it is that grave subjects ought not to be discussed in the open air, in a park, within the reach of every ear."

"Madame," said Gilbert, "I am now at your house, and permit me to observe that consequently it is you who have chosen the place where we now are. What do you wish? I am entirely at your command."

"I wish you to do me the favour to finish this conversation in my cabinet."

"Ah! ah!" said Gilbert to himself, "if I did not fear to confuse her, I would ask her whether her cabinet is at Brussels."

But without asking her anything more, he contented himself with following the baroness, who began to walk quickly towards the chateau.

The same servant who had admitted Gilbert was found standing in front of the house. Madame de Staël made a sign to him, and, opening the doors herself, she led Gilbert into her cabinet, — a charming retreat, more masculine, it is true, than feminine, of which the second door and the two windows opened into a small garden, which was not only inaccessible to others, but also beyond the reach of all strange eyes.

When they had gone in, Madame de Staël closed the door, and turning towards Gilbert, —

"Monsieur, in the name of humanity, I call upon you to tell me the secret which is so important to my father, and which has brought you to Saint-Ouen."

"Madame," said Gilbert, "if your father could now hear me, if he could but know that I am the man who sent the king the secret memoirs entitled, 'Of the State of Ideas

and of Progress,' I am sure the Baron de Necker would immediately appear, and say to me, ' Doctor Gilbert, what do you desire of me? Speak, I am listening.' "

Gilbert had hardly pronounced these words when a secret door, which was concealed by a panel painted by Vanloo, was noiselessly slid aside, and the Baron de Necker, with a smiling countenance, suddenly appeared, standing at the foot of a small, winding staircase, at the top of which could be perceived the dim rays of a lamp.

Then the Baroness de Stael curtsied to Gilbert, and, kissing her father's forehead, left the room by the same staircase which her father had just descended, and, having closed the panel, disappeared.

Necker advanced towards Gilbert and gave him his hand, saying,—

" Here I am, Monsieur Gilbert; what do you desire of me? Speak, I am listening."

They both seated themselves.

" Monsieur le Baron," said Gilbert, " you have just heard a secret which has revealed all my ideas to you. It was I who, four years ago, sent an essay to the king on the general state of Europe; it is I who, since then, have sent him from the United States the various works he has received on all the questions of conciliation and internal administration which have been discussed in France."

" Works of which his Majesty," replied M. de Necker, bowing, " has never spoken to me without expressing a deep admiration of them, though at the same time a profound terror at their contents."

" Yes, because they told the truth. Was it not because the truth was then terrible to hear, and, having become a fact, it is still more terrible to witness? "

" That is unquestionably true, monsieur," said Necker.

" Did the king send these essays to you for perusal? " asked Gilbert.

" Not all of them, monsieur; only two: one on the subject of the finances,—and you were of my opinion with a

very few exceptions; but I nevertheless felt myself much honoured by it."

"But that is not all; there was one in which I predicted all the important events which have taken place."

"Ah!"

"Yes."

"And which of them, monsieur, I pray?"

"There were two in particular; one was that the king would find himself some day compelled to dismiss you, in consequence of some engagements he had previously entered into."

"Did you predict my disgrace to him?"

"Perfectly."

"That was the first event: what was the second?"

"The taking of the Bastile."

"Did you predict the taking of the Bastile?"

"Monsieur le Baron, the Bastile was more than a royal prison, it was the symbol of tyranny. Liberty has commenced its career by destroying the symbol; the Revolution will do the rest."

"Have you duly considered the serious nature of the words you have just uttered, monsieur?"

"Undoubtedly I have."

"And you are not afraid to express such a theory openly?"

"Afraid of what?"

"Afraid lest some misfortune should befall you."

"Monsieur de Necker," said Gilbert smiling, "after once having got out of the Bastile a man has nothing more to fear."

"Have you, then, come out of the Bastile?"

"I ought to ask you that question."

"Ask me?"

"You, undoubtedly."

"And why should you ask me?"

"Because it was you who caused my imprisonment there."

"I had you thrown into the Bastile?"

"Six days ago; the date, as you see, is not so very remote that you should not be able to recollect it."

MADAME DE STAEL

"It is impossible."

"Do you recognise your own signature?"

And Gilbert showed the ex-minister a leaf of the jail-book of the Bastille, and the *lettre de cachet* which was annexed to it.

"Yes," said Necker, "that is doubtless the *lettre de cachet*. You know that I signed as few as possible, and that the smallest number possible was still four thousand annually; besides which, at the moment of my departure, they made me sign several in blank. Your warrant of imprisonment, monsieur, must have been one of the latter."

"Do you mean to imply by this, that I must in no way attribute my imprisonment to you?"

"No, of course not."

"But still, Monsieur le Baron," said Gilbert, smiling, "you understand my motives for being so curious; it is absolutely necessary that I should know to whom I am indebted for my captivity. Be good enough, therefore, to tell me."

"Oh, there is nothing easier. I have never left my letters at the ministry, and every evening I brought them back here. Those of this month are in the drawer B of this chiffonnier; let us look for the letter G in the bundle."

Necker opened the drawer, and looked over an enormous file, which might have contained some five or six hundred letters.

"I only keep those letters," said the ex-minister, "which are of such a nature as to cover my responsibility. Every arrest that I order insures me another enemy. I must therefore have guarded myself against such a contingency. The contrary would surprise me greatly. Let us see, — G, — G, — that is the one. Yes, Gilbert. Your arrest was brought about by some one in the queen's household, my dear sir."

"Ah! ah! in the queen's household?"

"Yes, here is a request for a warrant against a man named Gilbert. Profession not mentioned; black eyes,

black hair. The description of your person follows. Travelling from Havre to Paris. That is all. Then the Gilbert mentioned in the warrant must have been you."

"It was myself. Can you trust me with that letter?"

"No; but I can tell you by whom it was signed."

"Please to do so."

"By the Countess de Charny."

"The Countess de Charny," repeated Gilbert. "I do not know her. I have done nothing to displease her."

And he raised his head gently, as if endeavouring to recall to mind the name of the person in question.

"There is, moreover, a small postscript," continued Necker, "without any signature, but written in a hand I know."

Gilbert stooped down and read in the margin of the letter, —

"Do what the Countess de Charny demands immediately."

"It is strange," said Gilbert. "I can readily conceive why the queen should have signed it, for I mentioned both her and the Polignacs in my essays. But Madame de Charny —"

"Do you not know her?"

"It must be an assumed name. Besides, it is not at all to be wondered at that the notabilities of Versailles should be unknown to me. I have been absent from France for fifteen years, during which time I only came back twice; and I returned after my second visit to it, some four years ago. Who is this Countess de Charny?"

"The friend, the bosom companion of the queen; the much beloved wife of the Count de Charny; a woman who is both beautiful and virtuous, — a prodigy, in short."

"Well, then, I do not know this prodigy."

"If such be the case, doctor, be persuaded of this, that you are the victim of some political intrigue. Have you never spoken of Count Cagliostro?"

"Yes."

"Were you acquainted with him?"

"He was my friend. He was even more than my friend, — he was my master, my saviour."

"Well, then, either Austria or the Holy See must have demanded your incarceration. You have published some pamphlets, have you not?"

"Alas! yes."

"That is it precisely. All their petty revenges point towards the queen, like the magnetic needle which points towards the pole, — the iron towards the loadstone. They have been conspiring against you, — they have had you followed. The queen has ordered Madame de Charny to sign the letter, in order to prevent any suspicion; and now all the mystery is cleared up."

Gilbert reflected for a moment. This moment of reflection reminded him of the box which had been stolen from Billot's house; and with which neither the queen, nor Austria, nor the Holy See had any connection. This recollection led his mind to consider the matter in its right point of view.

"No," said he, "it is not that; it cannot be that. But it matters not. Let us talk of something else."

"Of what?"

"Of you."

"Of me? What can you have to say of me?"

"Only what you know, as well as any one else. It is that, before three days have elapsed, you will be reinstated in your ministerial capacity; and then you may govern France as despotically as you please."

"Do you think so?" said Necker, smiling.

"And you think so too, since you are not at Brussels."

"Well, then," exclaimed Necker, "what will be the result? — for it is the result I wish to come to."

"Here it is. You are beloved by the French. You will soon be adored by them. The queen was already tired of seeing you beloved. The king will grow tired of seeing you adored. They will acquire popularity at your expense, and you will not suffer it. Then you will become unpop-

ular in your turn. The people, my dear Monsieur de Necker, is like a starving lion, which licks only the hand that supplies it with food, be it whose hand it may."

"After that?"

"After that you will again be lost in oblivion."

"I, — fall into oblivion?"

"Alas! yes."

"And what will cause me to be forgotten?"

"The events of the times."

"My word of honour for it, you speak like a prophet."

"It is my misfortune to be one to a certain extent."

"Let us hear now what will happen?"

"Oh! it is not difficult to predict what will happen, for that which is to happen is already in embryo in the Assembly. A party will arise that is slumbering at this moment. I am mistaken, it is not slumbering, but it hides itself. This party has for its chief a principle, and its weapon is an idea."

"I understand you. You mean the Orleanist party?"

"No. I should have said of that one that its chief was a man, and its weapon popularity. I speak to you of a party whose name has not even yet been pronounced, — of the republican party."

"Of the republican party? Ah! that is too ridiculous."

"Do you not believe in its existence?"

"A chimera."

"Yes, a chimera with a mouth of fire that will devour you all."

"Well, then, I shall become a republican. I am one already."

"A republican from Geneva, certainly."

"But it seems to me that a republican is a republican."

"There is your mistake, my good baron. Our republicans do not resemble the republicans of other countries. Our republicans will first have to devour all privileges, then the nobility, and after that the monarchy. You may start with our republicans, but they will reach the goal without you,

for you will not desire to follow them so far. No, Monsieur de Necker, you are mistaken, you are not a republican."

"Oh, if you understand it in that sense, no; I love the king."

"And I too," said Gilbert; "and everybody at this moment loves him as we do. If I were to say this to a mind of less calibre than yours, I should be hooted and laughed at; but believe what I tell you, Monsieur de Necker."

"I would readily do so, indeed, if there were any probability of such an event; but —"

"Do you know any of the secret societies?"

"I have heard them much spoken of."

"Do you believe in their existence?"

"I believe in their existence, but I do not believe they are very extensively disseminated."

"Are you affiliated to any one of them?"

"No."

"Do you belong even to a masonic lodge?"

"No."

"Well, then, Monsieur de Necker, I do."

"Are you affiliated?"

"Yes, to all of them. Beware, Monsieur de Necker; they form an immense net that surrounds every throne. It is an invisible dagger that threatens every monarchy. We form a brotherhood of about three millions of men, disseminated throughout all classes of society. We have friends among the people, among the citizens, among the nobility, among princes, among sovereigns themselves. Take care, Monsieur de Necker; the prince with whom you might be irritated is perhaps an affiliated member. The valet who humbles himself in your presence may be an affiliated member. Your life is not yours; your fortune is not your own; your honour even is not yours. All this is directed by an invisible power, which you cannot combat, for you do not know it, and which may crush you because it knows you. Well, these three millions of

men, do you see, who have already made the American republic, these three millions of men will try to form a French republic; then they will try to make a European republic."

"But," said Necker, "their republic of the United States does not alarm me much, and I willingly accept such a form of government."

"Yes, but between America and ourselves there is a deep gulf. America is a new country, without prejudices, without aristocratic privileges, without monarchy. It has a fertile soil, productive land, and virgin forests; America, which is situated between a sea which serves as an outlet for its commerce and an immense solitude which is a source of wealth to its population, while France!—just consider how much it would be necessary to destroy in France before France can resemble America."

"But, in fine, what do you intend to prove by this?"

"I mean to point out to you the path into which we are inevitably forced. But I would endeavour to advance into it without causing any shock, by placing the king at the head of the movement."

"As a standard?"

"No, but as a shield."

"A shield!" observed Necker, smiling. "You know but little of the king if you wish to make him play such a part."

"Pardon me, I know him well. Oh! gracious Heaven! I know full well he is a man similar to a thousand others whom I have seen at the head of small districts in America; he is a good man without majesty, incapable of resistance, without originality of mind. But what would you have? Were it only for his sacred title, he would still be a rampart against those men of whom I was speaking to you a short time ago; and however weak the rampart may be, we like it better than no defence at all."

"I remember in our wars with the savage tribes of North America," continued Gilbert, "I remember having

passed whole nights behind a clump of bulrushes, while the enemy was on the opposite bank of the river, and was firing upon us.

"A bulrush is certainly no great defence. Still, I must frankly acknowledge to you, Monsieur de Necker, that my heart beat more freely behind those large green tubes, which were cut through by the bullets as if they were thread papers, than it did in the open field. Well, then, the king is my rush. It allows me to see the enemy, and it prevents the enemy from seeing me. That is the reason why I am a republican at New York or at Philadelphia, but a royalist in France. There our dictator was named Washington. Here, God knows what he will be named: either dagger or scaffold."

"You seem to view things in colours of blood, doctor."

"You would have seen them in the same light as myself, if you had been, as I was, on the Place de Grève to-day."

"Yes, that is true; I was told that a massacre had taken place there."

"There is something magnificent, do you see, in the people; but it is when well disposed. Oh! human tempests!" exclaimed Gilbert, "how much do you surpass in fury all the tempests of the skies!"

Necker became thoughtful.

"Why can I not have you near me, doctor?" said he; "you would be a useful counsellor in time of need."

"Near you, Monsieur de Necker, I should not be so useful to you, and so useful to France, as where I wish to go."

"And where do you wish to go?"

"Listen to me, monsieur; near the throne itself there is a great enemy of the throne; near the king there is a great enemy of the king; it is the queen. Poor woman! who forgets that she is the daughter of Maria Theresa, or rather, who only remembers it in a vainglorious point of view; she thinks to save the king, and ruins more than the king, for she destroys the monarchy. Well, it is necessary that we who love the king, we who love France,

should unite together to neutralise her power, and to annihilate her influence."

"Well, then, do as I said, monsieur: remain with me, assist me."

"If I were to remain near you, we should have but one sphere for action; you would be me, and I should be you. We must separate our forces, monsieur, and then they will acquire a double weight."

"And, with all that, what can we accomplish?"

"We may retard the catastrophe, perhaps, but certainly we cannot prevent it, although I can answer for the assistance of a powerful auxiliary, the Marquis de Lafayette."

"Is not Lafayette a republican?"

"As far as a Lafayette can be a republican. If we are absolutely to submit to the level of equality, believe me, we had better choose the level of nobility. I like equality that elevates, and not that which lowers mankind."

"And you can answer for Lafayette?"

"Yes, so long as we shall require nothing of him but honour, courage, and devotedness."

"Well, then, speak; tell me what is it you desire?"

"A letter of introduction to his Majesty, Louis XVI."

"A man of your worth does not need a letter of introduction; he may present himself without it."

"No, it suits me that I should be your creature; it is part of my project to be presented by you."

"And what is your ambition?"

"To become one of the king's physicians in ordinary."

"Oh, there is nothing more easy. But the queen?"

"When I have once seen the king, that will be my own affair."

"But if she should persecute you?"

"Then I will make the king assert his will."

"The king assert his will? You will be more than a man if you accomplish that."

"He who can control the physical part of a man must be a great simpleton indeed if he does not some day succeed in controlling the mind."

"But do you not think that having been imprisoned in the Bastile is but a sorry recommendation for you, who wish to become the king's physician?"

"On the contrary, it is the very best. Have I not been, according to you, persecuted for the crime of philosophy?"

"I fear such is the case."

"Then the king will vindicate his reputation, — the king will become popular by taking as his physician a pupil of Rousseau, — a partisan of the new doctrines, — a prisoner who has left the Bastile, in short. The first time you see him, make him duly weigh the advantage of such a course."

"You are always in the right; but when once you are employed by the king, can I rely upon you?"

"Entirely, so long as you shall follow the line of politics which we shall adopt."

"What will you promise me?"

"To warn you of the precise moment when you must retreat."

Necker looked at Gilbert for a moment; then, in a more thoughtful tone: —

"Indeed, that is the greatest service which a devoted friend can render to a minister, for it is the last one."

And he seated himself at his table to write to the king.

While he was thus occupied, Gilbert was again examining the letter demanding his arrest; he several times repeated, —

"The Countess de Charny? who can she be?"

"Here, monsieur," said Necker, a few moments after, while he presented Gilbert with the letter he had just written.

Gilbert took the letter and read it.

It contained the following lines: —

"SIRE, — Your Majesty needs the services of a trustworthy person, with whom you may converse upon your affairs. My last gift, my last service in leaving the king, is the present I make him of Doctor Gilbert.

"It will be sufficient for me to tell your Majesty that Doctor Gilbert is not only one of the most skilful physicians living, but also the author of the works entitled "Administrations and Politics," which made so lively an impression upon the mind of your Majesty.

"At your Majesty's feet,
"BARON DE NECKER."

Necker did not date the letter, and gave it to Doctor Gilbert closed only with an ordinary seal.

"And now," added he, "I am again at Brussels, am I not?"

"Yes, certainly, and more so than ever. To-morrow morning, at all events, you shall hear from me."

The baron struck against the panel in a peculiar manner.

Madame de Stael again appeared; only this time, in addition to her branch of pomegranate, she held one of Doctor Gilbert's pamphlets in her hands.

She showed him the title of it with a sort of flattering coquetry.

Gilbert took leave of Monsieur de Necker, and kissed the hand of the baroness, who accompanied him to the door of the cabinet.

And he returned to his coach, where he found Pitou and Billot sleeping upon the front seat, the coachman sleeping on his box, and the horses sleeping upon their exhausted limbs.

CHAPTER XXII.

KING LOUIS XVI.

THE interview between Gilbert, Madame de Staël, and Monsieur de Necker had lasted about an hour and a half. Gilbert re-entered Paris at a quarter past nine o'clock. He drove straight to the post-house, ordered horses and a post-chaise; and while Billot and Pitou were gone to rest themselves after their fatigue in a small hotel in the Rue Thiroux, where Billot generally put up when he came to Paris, Gilbert set off at a gallop on the road to Versailles.

It was late, but that mattered little to Gilbert. To men of his nature, activity is a necessity. Perhaps his journey might be a fruitless one. But he even preferred a useless journey to remaining motionless. For nervous temperaments, uncertainty is a greater torment than the most frightful reality.

He arrived at Versailles at half past ten; in ordinary times, every one would have been in bed and wrapped in the profoundest slumber; but that night no eye was closed at Versailles. They had felt the counter shock of the terrible concussion with which Paris was still trembling.

The French Guards, the body guards, the Swiss, drawn up in platoons and grouped near the openings of all the principal streets, were conversing among themselves, or with those of the citizens whose fidelity to the monarchy inspired them with confidence.

For Versailles has, at all times, been a royalist city. Religious respect for the monarchy, if not for the monarch, is engrafted in the hearts of its inhabitants, as if it were a

quality of its soil. Having always lived near kings, and fostered by their bounty, beneath the shade of their wonders, — having always inhaled the intoxicating perfume of the *fleurs de lis*, and seen the brilliant gold of their garments and the smiles upon their august lips, — the inhabitants of Versailles, for whom kings have built a city of marble and porphyry, feel almost kings themselves; and even at the present day, even now, when moss is growing round the marble, and grass is springing up between the slabs of the pavement, now that gold has almost disappeared from the wainscoting, and that the shady walks of the parks are more solitary than a graveyard, Versailles must either belie its origin, or must consider itself as a fragment of the fallen monarchy, and, no longer feeling the pride of power and wealth, must at least retain the poetical associations of regret and the sovereign charms of melancholy. Thus, as we have already stated, all Versailles, in the night between the 14th and 15th of July, 1789, was confusedly agitated, anxious to ascertain how the King of France would reply to the insult offered to the throne, and the deadly wound inflicted on his power.

By his answer to Monsieur de Dreux-Brézé, Mirabeau had struck the very face of royalty.

By the taking of the Bastile, the people had struck royalty to the heart.

Still, to narrow-minded and short-sighted persons the question seemed easy of solution. In the eyes of military men in particular, who were accustomed to see nothing more than the triumph or defeat of brute force in the result of events, it was merely necessary to march upon Paris. Thirty thousand men and twenty pieces of cannon would soon reduce to a nonentity the conceit and the victorious fury of the Parisians.

Never had monarchy so great a number of advisers, for everybody uttered his opinions loudly and publicly.

The most moderate said : —

“It is a very simple matter.”

This form of language, it will be observed, is nearly always applied, with us, to the most difficult circumstances.

"It is a very simple matter," said they. "Let them begin by obtaining from the National Assembly a sanction which it will not refuse. Its attitude has for some time been reassuring to every one; it will not countenance violence committed by the lower classes, any more than abuses perpetrated by the upper.

"The Assembly will plainly declare that insurrection is a crime; that citizens who have representatives to explain their griefs to the king, and a king to do them justice, are wrong to have recourse to arms and to shed blood.

"Being once armed with this declaration, which could certainly be obtained from the Assembly, the king could not avoid chastising Paris, like a good parent, that is to say, severely.

"And then the tempest would be allayed, and the monarchy would regain the first of its rights. The people would return to their duty, which is obedience, and things would go on in the usual way."

It was thus that the people in general were settling this great question upon the squares and the Boulevards.

But before the Place d'Armes, and in the vicinity of the barracks, they treated the subject very differently.

There could be seen men altogether unknown in the neighbourhood, men with intelligent countenances and sinister looks, disseminating mysterious advice to all around them, exaggerating the news which was already sufficiently serious, and propagating almost publicly the seditious ideas which during two months had agitated Paris and excited the suburbs. Round these men groups were forming, some gloomy and hostile, some excited, composed of people whom these orators were reminding of their misery, their sufferings, the brutal disdain of the monarchy for the privations of the people. An orator said to them:—

"During eight centuries that the people have struggled, what have they obtained? Nothing. No social rights, no

political rights. What is their fate? That of the farmer's cow, from whom its calf is led to the shambles, its milk to be sold at the market, its meat to be taken to the slaughter-house, its skin to be dried at the tannery. In short, pressed by want, the monarchy has yielded, it has made an appeal to the States; but now that the States are assembled, what does the monarchy? Since the day of their convocation it weighs heavily upon them. If the National Assembly is formed, it is against the will of the monarchy. Well, then, since our brethren of Paris have just given us such vigorous assistance, let us urge the National Assembly onward. Each step which it takes in the political arena is a victory for us: it is the extension of our field, it is the increase of our fortune, it is the consecration of our rights. Forward! forward! citizens. The Bastille is but the outwork of tyranny! The Bastille is taken, — the citadel is before us!"

In remote corners other meetings were formed, and other words pronounced. Those who pronounced them were men evidently belonging to a superior class, who had sought in the costume of the vulgar a disguise with which their white hands and distinguished accent contrasted strangely.

"People," exclaimed these men, "in truth, you are deceived on both sides! Some ask you to retrace your steps, while others urge you onward. Some speak to you of political rights, of social rights; but are you happier for having been permitted to vote through the medium of your delegates? Are you any the richer since you have been represented? Have you been less hungry, now that the National Assembly makes decrees? No. Leave politics, then, to those who can read. It is not a written phrase or maxim that you need. It is bread, and again bread; it is the well-being of your children, the tranquillity and security of your wives. Who will give you all that? A king, firm in character, young in mind, and of a generous heart. That king is not Louis XVI., — Louis XVI., who is ruled by his wife, the iron-hearted Austrian. It is — search carefully round

the throne; search there for him who can render France happy, and whom the queen naturally detests, and that because he throws a shadow over the picture, because he loves the French, and is beloved by them."

Thus did public opinion manifest itself at Versailles, thus was civil war fomented everywhere.

Gilbert observed several of these groups, and then, having perceived the state of the public mind, he walked straight to the palace, which was guarded by numerous military posts, to protect it against whom no one knew.

Notwithstanding all these precautions, Gilbert without the slightest difficulty crossed the first courtyard, and reached the vestibule without having been asked by any one where he was going.

When he arrived at the hall of the *Œil-de-Bœuf*, he was stopped by one of the body guards. Gilbert drew from his pocket the letter of Monsieur de Necker, whose signature he showed.

The guard cast his eyes over it. The instructions he had received were very strict; and as the strictest instructions are precisely those which most need to be interpreted, the guard said to Gilbert:—

"The order, monsieur, to allow no one to visit the king is positive; but as the case of a person sent by Monsieur de Necker was evidently not foreseen, and as according to all probability you are the bearer of important information to his Majesty, go in. I will take the responsibility upon myself."

Gilbert entered.

The king was not in his apartments, but in the council room. He was just receiving a deputation from the National Guard of Paris, which had come to request the dismissal of the troops, the formation of a guard of citizens, and his presence in the capital.

Louis had listened coldly; then he had replied that the situation of affairs required investigation; and that, moreover, he was about to deliberate on the subject with his council.

And, accordingly, he deliberated.

During this time the deputies were waiting in the gallery, and through the ground-glass windows of the doors they could observe the shadows of the royal councillors and the threatening attitude which they assumed.

By the study of this species of phantasmagoria, they could foresee that the answer would be unfavourable.

In fact, the king contented himself with saying that he would appoint some officers for the national militia, and would order the troops at the Champ de Mars to fall back.

As to his presence in Paris, he would only show this favour when the rebellious city had completely submitted.

The deputation begged, insisted, and conjured. The king replied that his heart was grieved, but that he could do nothing more.

And satisfied with this momentary triumph and this manifestation of a power which he no longer possessed, the king returned to his apartment.

He there found Gilbert. The guard was standing near him.

"What is wanted of me?" asked the king.

The body guard approached him, and while he was apologising to the king for having disobeyed his orders, Gilbert, who for many years had not seen the king, was silently examining the man whom God had given to France as her pilot during the most violent tempest the country had ever experienced.

That stout, short body, in which there was neither elasticity nor majesty; that inexpressive and low-formed brow; that pallid youthfulness contending against premature old age; the unequal struggle between a powerful physical organisation and a mediocre intelligence, to which the haughtiness of rank alone gave a fitting importance; — all these to the physiognomist who had studied Lavater, to the magnetiser who had read the future with Balsamo, to the philosopher who had dreamed with Jean Jacques,

to the traveller, in short, who had passed all the human races in review, — all these implied degeneracy, dwindling, impotence, and ruin.

Gilbert was therefore struck dumb, not from a feeling of respect, but from grief, while contemplating this mournful spectacle.

The king advanced towards him.

"It is you," said he, "who bring me a letter from Monsieur de Necker?"

"Yes, sire."

"Ah!" cried he, as if he had doubted it, "give it to me quickly."

And he pronounced these words in the tone of a drowning man who cries out, "A rope!"

Gilbert presented the letter to the king.

Louis immediately grasped it, read it hurriedly, then, with a sign which was not altogether wanting in a sort of nobleness of manner, —

"Leave us, Monsieur de Varicourt," said he to the body guard.

Gilbert remained alone with the king. The room was lighted but by a single lamp. It might have been thought the king had diminished the quantity of light, in order that no one should perceive on his wearied rather than care-worn brow the anxious thoughts which crowded there.

"Monsieur," said he, fastening upon Gilbert a clearer and more penetrating gaze than the latter would have thought him capable of, "Monsieur, is it true that you are the author of the memoirs which have so much struck me?"

"Yes, sire."

"What is your age?"

"Thirty-two years, sire; but study and misfortunes double age. Treat me as if I were an old man."

"Why did you omit so long to present yourself to me?"

"Because, sire, I did not wish to tell your Majesty aloud what I could write to him more freely and more easily."

Louis XVI. reflected.

"Had you no other reason?" said he, suspiciously.

"No, sire."

"But still, either I am mistaken, or there were some peculiar circumstances which ought to have convinced you of my kindly feeling towards you."

"Your Majesty intends to speak of that sort of rendezvous which I had the temerity to give the king, when, after my first memoir, I begged him, five years ago, to place a light near his window, at eight o'clock in the evening, to indicate that he had read my work."

"And —" said the king, with an air of satisfaction.

"And on the day, and at the hour appointed, the light was in fact placed where I had asked you to place it."

"And afterwards?"

"Afterwards I saw it lifted up and set down again three times."

"And then?"

"After that I read the following words in the Gazette: —

"'He whom the light has called three times may present himself to him who has raised it three times, when he will be compensated.'"

"Those are, in fact, the very words of the advertisement," said the king.

"And there is the advertisement itself," said Gilbert, drawing from his pocket the number of the Gazette in which the advertisement he had just alluded to had been published five years previously.

"Well, — very well," said the king, "I long expected you. You arrive at a moment I had quite ceased to expect you. You are welcome; for you come, like good soldiers, at the moment of the battle."

Then, looking once more attentively at Gilbert, —

"Do you know, monsieur," said he to him, "that it is not an ordinary thing for a king to await the arrival of a person to whom he has said, 'Come to receive your reward,' and that that person should abstain from coming?"

Gilbert smiled.

"Come now, tell me," said Louis XVI., "why did you not come?"

"Because I deserved no reward, sire."

"For what reason?"

"Born a Frenchman, loving my country, anxious for its prosperity, confounding my individuality with that of thirty millions of men, my fellow citizens, I laboured for myself while labouring for them. A man is not worthy of reward when he labours for his own interest."

"That is a paradox, monsieur: you had another reason."

Gilbert did not reply.

"Speak, monsieur, I desire it."

"Perhaps, sire, you have guessed rightly."

"Is not that it?" asked the king, in an anxious tone. "You found the position a very serious one, and you abstained."

"For fear of one still more serious. Yes, sire, your Majesty has divined the truth."

"I like frankness," said the king, who could not conceal his agitation; for he was of a timid nature, and blushed easily.

"Then," continued Louis XVI., "you predicted the king's fall to him, and you feared to be placed too near the ruins."

"No, sire, since it is just at the moment that danger is most imminent that I come to face the danger."

"Yes, yes; you have just left Necker, and you speak like him. The danger!—the danger! Without doubt, it is dangerous at this moment to approach me. And where is Necker?"

"Quite ready, I believe, to obey the orders of your Majesty."

"So much the better; I shall want him," said the king, with a sigh. "In politics we must not be headstrong. We think to do good and we do wrong. We even do good, and

some capricious event mars our project; and though the plans laid were in reality good, we are accused of having been mistaken."

The king sighed again. Gilbert came to his assistance.

"Sire," said he, "your Majesty reasons admirably; but what is desirable at the present moment is to see into the future more clearly than has been done hitherto."

The king raised his head, and his inexpressive eyebrows slightly frowned.

"Sire, forgive me," said Gilbert; "I am a physician. When the danger is imminent I speak briefly."

"Do you, then, attach much importance to the riot of to-day?"

"Sire, it is not a riot, it is a revolution."

"And you wish me to make terms with rebels and assassins? For, in fine, they have taken the Bastille by force: it is an act of rebellion; they have killed Monsieur de Launay, Monsieur de Losme, and Monsieur de Flesselles: it is murder."

"I wish you to distinguish more correctly, sire. Those who took the Bastille are heroes; those who assassinated Messieurs de Flesselles, De Losme, and De Launay are murderers."

The king coloured slightly, and almost immediately this colour disappeared, his lips became pale, and a few drops of perspiration trickled down his forehead.

"You are right, monsieur. You are a physician indeed, or a surgeon rather, for you cut to the quick. But let us return to the object of our interview. You are Dr. Gilbert, are you not? or at least it is with this name that your memoirs are signed?"

"Sire, it does me great honour that your Majesty has so good a memory, although, taking it all in all, I have no great reason to be proud of my name."

"How is that?"

"My name must indeed have been pronounced before your Majesty, and that not long ago."

"I do not understand you."

"Six days ago I was arrested and thrown into the Bastille. Now, I have heard it said that no arrest of any importance was ever made without the king being aware of the fact."

"You in the Bastille!" said the king, opening his eyes widely.

"Here is the registration of my imprisonment, sire. Put in prison, as I have the honour to tell your Majesty, six days ago, by order of the king, I came out of it at three o'clock to-day, by the grace of the people."

"To-day?"

"Yes, sire. Did your Majesty hear the cannon?"

"Most undoubtedly."

"Well, then, the cannon opened the gates for me."

"Ah!" murmured the king, "I would willingly say that I am pleased at this event, had not the cannon of this morning been fired at the Bastille and the monarchy at the same time."

"Oh, sire, do not make a prison the symbol of a principle! Say, on the contrary, sire, that you rejoice that the Bastille is taken; for henceforward injustice will not be committed in the king's name without his cognisance, — injustice similar to that of which I have just been the victim."

"But, surely, monsieur, your arrest must have had a cause?"

"None that I know of, sire. I was arrested on my return to France, and imprisoned, that is all."

"Really, monsieur," said Louis XVI. kindly, "is there not some egotism on your part in speaking to me thus of yourself, when I so much need to have my own position spoken of?"

"Sire, all I require is that your Majesty will answer me one single question."

"What is it?"

"Was or was not your Majesty concerned in my arrest?"

"I was not even aware of your return to France."

"I rejoice at this answer, sire; I shall then be enabled to declare openly that when your Majesty is supposed to do wrong, he is nearly always calumniated; and to those who doubt it, I can cite myself as an example."

The king smiled.

"As a physician," said he, "you pour balm into the wound."

"Oh, sire, I shall pour in the balm abundantly; and, if you desire it, I will cure the wound. That I will answer for."

"I most assuredly desire it."

"You must desire it very firmly, sire."

"I do desire it firmly."

"Before going any further, sire," said Gilbert, "read that line written in the margin of my jail-book entry."

"What line?" asked the king in an anxious tone.

Gilbert presented the page to the king. The king read: "By request of the queen."

The king frowned.

"Of the queen!" said he; "can you have incurred her displeasure?"

"Sire, I am certain her Majesty knows me still less than did your Majesty."

"But still, you must have committed some fault; a man is not sent to the Bastille for nothing."

"It would seem so, since I have just come out of it."

"But Monsieur Necker has sent you to me, and the warrant of imprisonment was signed by him."

"It was so, undoubtedly."

"Then explain yourself more clearly. Review your past life. See if you do not find some circumstance in it which you had yourself forgotten."

"Review my past life! Yes, sire; I shall do it, and aloud; do not fear, it will not occupy much time. I have laboured without intermission since I attained the age of sixteen; the pupil of Jean Jacques, the companion of Balsamo, the friend of Lafayette and of Washington, I have never had

cause to reproach myself since the day that I left France for a single fault, nor even an error. When acquired science permitted me to attend the wounded or the sick, I always thought myself responsible to God for every one of my thoughts, and every action. Since God had given me the care of human beings as a surgeon, I have shed blood for the sake of humanity, while ready to give my own to soothe or to save my patient; as a physician I have always been a consoler, and sometimes a benefactor. Fifteen years have thus passed away. God blessed my efforts: I saw return to life the greater part of the afflicted, who all kissed my hands. Those who died had been condemned by the will of God. No, I repeat it, sire, since the day when I left France, and that was fifteen years ago, I have done nothing with which I can reproach myself."

"You have associated with the innovators of America, and your writings have propagated their principles."

"Yes, sire; and I forgot this claim to the gratitude of kings and men."

The king was silent.

"Sire," continued Gilbert, "now, my life is known to you; I have neither offended nor wounded any one,—neither a beggar nor a queen,—and I come to ask your Majesty why I have been punished."

"I shall speak to the queen, Monsieur Gilbert; but do you think the *lettre de cachet* comes directly from the queen?"

"I do not say that, sire: I even think the queen merely recommended it."

"Ah! you see," cried Louis, quite joyfully.

"Yes; but you are aware, sire, that what a queen recommends, she commands."

"At whose request was the *lettre de cachet* granted? Let us see."

"Yes, sire," said Gilbert. "Look at it."

And he presented him the entry in the jail-book.

"The Countess de Charny!" exclaimed the king. "How,

it is she who caused your arrest. But what can you have done to this poor Charny?"

"I did not even know that lady by name, this morning, sire."

Louis passed his hand over his brow.

"Charny," murmured he, "Charny, —sweetness, virtue, chastity itself."

"You will see, sire," said Gilbert, laughing, "that I was imprisoned in the Bastile at the request of the three theological virtues."

"Oh! I will clear this up at once," said the king.

And he went to the fireplace and pulled the bell.

An usher appeared.

"See if the Countess de Charny is with the queen," said Louis.

"Sire," said the usher, "the countess has just this instant crossed the gallery; she is about stepping into her coach."

"Run after her," said Louis, eagerly, "and request her to come to my cabinet on an affair of importance."

Then, turning towards Gilbert, —

"Is that what you desire, monsieur?" said he.

"Yes, sire," answered Gilbert, "and I return a thousand thanks to your Majesty."

CHAPTER XXIII.

THE COUNTESS DE CHARNY.

GILBERT, on hearing the order to send for Madame de Charny, had retired into the recess of a window.

As to the king, he was walking up and down the room called the *Œil-de-Bœuf*, preoccupied at times with public affairs, at others with the pertinacity of this Gilbert, by whom, in spite of himself, he felt strangely influenced, and at a moment when nothing ought to have interested him but the affairs of Paris.

Suddenly the door of the cabinet was thrown open; the usher announced the Countess de Charny; and Gilbert, through the closed curtains, could perceive a woman whose flowing and silken robes grazed the half opened door.

This lady was dressed, according to the fashion of the times, in a *déshabille* of gray silk, striped with a variety of colours, with a petticoat of the same stuff, and a sort of shawl, which, after being crossed over the chest, was fastened behind her waist, and showed to great advantage the beauties of a full and well-developed bosom; a small bonnet, coquettishly fixed on the summit of a high head-dress, high-heeled shoes, which showed the exquisite shape of a beautiful instep, a small cane twirled by the gloved fingers of a slender and delicate hand, with tapering and perfectly aristocratic fingers: such was the person so anxiously expected by Gilbert.

The king stepped forward to meet her.

"You were just going out, countess, I was told."

"In truth, sire," replied the countess, "I was on the point of stepping into my carriage when I received your Majesty's order."

On hearing this firm-toned voice, the ears of Gilbert were suddenly assailed as with a rushing sound. The blood instantly suffused his cheeks, and a thousand shudders appeared to thrill through his whole system.

Despite himself, he made a step from the curtain behind which he had secreted himself.

"She!" stammered he; "she — Andrée —"

"Madame," continued the king, who, as well as the countess, had not observed the emotion of Gilbert, who was hidden in the shade, "I requested you to visit me for the purpose of obtaining some information from you."

"I am ready to comply with your Majesty's wishes."

The king leaned in the direction of Gilbert, as if to warn him.

The latter, perceiving that the moment to show himself had not yet arrived, gradually withdrew himself again behind the curtain.

"Madame," said the king, "it is now eight or ten days since a warrant of imprisonment was requested of Monsieur de Necker —"

Gilbert through the almost imperceptible opening between the curtains, fastened his gaze upon Andrée. The young woman was pale, feverish, and anxious, and appeared borne down by the weight of a secret prepossession, for which even she herself could not account.

"You hear me, do you not, countess?" asked Louis XVI., seeing that Madame de Charny hesitated before answering.

"Yes, sire."

"Well, do you understand me, and can you answer my question?"

"I am endeavouring to remember," said Andrée.

"Permit me to assist your memory, countess. The warrant of imprisonment was demanded by you, and the demand was countersigned by the queen."

The countess, instead of answering, appeared to abandon herself more and more to that feverish abstraction which seemed to lead her beyond the limits of real life.

"But answer me, then, madame," said the king, who began to grow impatient.

"It is true," said she, trembling, "it is true. I wrote the letter, and her Majesty the queen countersigned it."

"Then," asked Louis, "tell me the crime which had been committed by the person against whom such a document was required."

"Sire," said Andrée, "I cannot tell you what crime he had committed; but what I can tell you is that the crime was great."

"Oh! can you not confide that even to me?"

"No, sire."

"Not to the king?"

"No. I hope your Majesty will forgive me; but I cannot."

"Then you shall tell it to him in person, madame," said the king; "for what you have refused to King Louis XVI., you cannot refuse to Doctor Gilbert."

"To Doctor Gilbert!" exclaimed Andrée. "Great God! where is he then?"

The king stepped aside to allow Gilbert to advance; the curtains were thrown apart, and the doctor appeared, almost as pale as Andrée.

"Here he is, madame," said he.

At the sight of Gilbert the countess staggered. Her limbs shook beneath her. She fell backwards, as does a person who is about to faint, and only maintained a standing position with the assistance of an arm-chair, on which she leaned in the sorrowful, motionless, and almost unconscious attitude of Eurydice at the moment when the serpent's venom reaches her heart.

"Madame," said Gilbert, bowing to her with mock politeness, "allow me to repeat the question which has just been put to you by his Majesty."

The lips of Andrée could be seen to move, but no sound issued from them.

"What offence had I committed, madame, that an order from you should have caused me to be thrown into a loathsome dungeon?"

On hearing this voice, Andrée bounded as if she had felt the tearing asunder of the fibres of her heart.

Then, on a sudden, casting upon Gilbert an icy look, like that of a serpent, —

"Me, monsieur?" said she; "I do not know you."

But while she pronounced these words, Gilbert on his side had looked at her with such intentness, he had loaded the brightness of his gaze with so much invincible audacity, that the countess cast down her eyes, completely overpowered.

"Countess," said the king, in a mild tone of reproach, "see where the abuse of a signature may lead you. Here is a gentleman whom you do not know, and you yourself confess it, — a man who is a great practitioner, a profound physician, a man who can be reproached for nothing."

Andrée raised her head, and almost petrified Gilbert by her contemptuous look.

He, however, remained calm and proud.

"I say, then," continued the king, "that, having no cause for complaint against Monsieur Gilbert, by thus persecuting him instead of another it is on the head of an innocent man that punishment has fallen. Countess, this is wrong."

"Sire," said Andrée.

"Ah!" interrupted the king, who already trembled for fear of disobliging the favourite of his wife, "I know that you are kind-hearted, and that if you have punished some one through hatred, that person must have deserved it; but you see that it will be necessary, in future, to avoid the recurrence of such mistakes."

Then, turning towards Gilbert: —

"You see, doctor, it is the fault of the times rather than that of men. We are born in corruption, and we die in it;

but we will endeavour at least to ameliorate the condition of posterity, and you will, I trust, assist me in this work, Doctor Gilbert."

And Louis ceased speaking, thinking he had said enough to satisfy both parties.

Poor king! had he pronounced those words before the National Assembly, not only would he have been applauded, but moreover he would have seen them reproduced in all the court journals.

But the two unrelenting enemies present at this interview appreciated but little his conciliating philosophy.

"With your Majesty's permission," said Gilbert, "I will request the countess to repeat what she has already stated, namely, that she does not know me."

"Countess," said the king, "will you do what the doctor requests of you?"

"I do not know Doctor Gilbert," repeated Andrée in a firm voice.

"But you know another Gilbert, my namesake; the Gilbert whose crime has been visited on me."

"Oh!" said Andrée, "I know that person, and I consider him an infamous wretch."

"Sire, it would not become me to interrogate the countess," said Gilbert; "but deign to ask her of what that infamous man has been guilty."

"Countess, you cannot refuse acceding to so just a request."

"What he has done?" said Andrée. "Doubtless the queen knew of what crime he had been guilty, since with her own hand she authorised the letter by means of which I applied for his arrest."

"But," said the king, "it is not quite sufficient that the queen should be convinced; it is necessary that I too should be convinced. The queen is the queen, but I am the king."

"Well, then, sire, the Gilbert mentioned in the warrant is a man who, sixteen years ago, committed a most fearful crime."

"Will your Majesty ask the countess how old that man is at the present day?"

The king repeated the question.

"From thirty to thirty-two," said Andrée.

"Sire," rejoined Gilbert, "if the orime was committed sixteen years ago, it was not committed by a man, but by a child; and if during these sixteen years the man has deplored the crime committed by the child, does not that man deserve some little leniency?"

"But, monsieur," asked the king, "you then know the Gilbert in question?"

"I know him, sire," said Gilbert.

"And has he committed no other fault except this one of his early youth?"

"I do not know that since the day on which he committed—I will not say that fault, sire, for I am less indulgent than you—but that crime, I do not know that any one in this world has aught to reproach him with."

"No, unless it is having dipped his pen in poison, and having composed the most odious libels," cried Andrée.

"Sire, please to ask the countess," said Gilbert, "if the real object of the arrest of this Gilbert was not to afford every facility to his enemies, or rather to his enemy, to obtain possession of a certain casket, containing certain papers which might have compromised a great lady, a lady of the court."

Andrée trembled from head to foot.

"Monsieur," faltered she.

"Countess, what is this casket?" asked the king, who had perceived the trembling and the pallor of the countess.

"Ah! madame," cried Gilbert, feeling that he was gaining the mastery, "no tergiversation, — no subterfuge. There have been misstatements enough on both sides. I am the Gilbert who committed the crime, — I am the Gilbert of the libels, — I am the Gilbert of the casket. You — you are the great lady, the lady of the court. I call upon the king to be our judge; accept him, and we will tell to this

judge,—to the king, to God,—we will tell all that has occurred between us; and the king shall decide while we await the judgment of God.”

“Say what you will, monsieur,” rejoined the countess, “but I can say nothing; I do not know you.”

“And you know nothing of this casket either?”

The countess convulsively closed her hands, and bit her pale lips till they bled.

“No,” said she, “I know no more of it than I do of you.”

But the effort she made to pronounce these words was such, that her body trembled as does a statue on its pedestal during an earthquake.

“Madame, beware,” said Gilbert. “I am, as you can hardly have forgotten, the pupil of a man called Joseph Balsamo. The power which he possessed over you he has transmitted to me. For the last time, will you answer the question I put to you? My casket?”

“No,” cried the countess, a prey to the most indescribable agitation, and making a movement to rush out of the room.

“Well, then,” said Gilbert, in his turn becoming pale, and raising his threatening arm; “well then! thou iron nature, thou heart of adamant, bend, burst, and break beneath the irresistible pressure of my will. Wilt thou not speak, Andrée?”

“No, no,” cried the countess, “help me, sire, help me!”

“Thou shalt speak,” cried Gilbert; “and no one, were he the king, or even God himself, can withdraw thee from my power. Thou shalt speak, then; thou shalt reveal thy whole soul to the witness of this solemn scene; and all that is contained in the recesses of thy conscience,—all that which God alone can read in the depths of the deepest souls, you shall know, sire, from the lips of her who refuses to reveal them. Sleep, madame the countess, sleep and speak. I will it!”

Hardly were the words pronounced when the countess stopped short in the midst of a suppressed cry, stretched

forth her arms, and seeking support for her trembling limbs, fell, as if imploring a refuge, into the arms of the king, who, trembling himself, seated her upon an arm-chair.

"Oh!" said Louis XVI., "I have heard of things of this nature, but I never before witnessed anything to equal it. Is it not to a magnetic sleep that she has just succumbed, monsieur?"

"Yes, sire; take the hand of the countess, and ask her why she caused me to be arrested," said Gilbert, as if the right to command belonged to him alone.

Louis XVI., quite thunderstruck by this marvellous scene, took two steps backwards to convince himself that he was not himself asleep, and that what was taking place before him was not a dream; then, like a mathematician who is interested in some new solution, he approached nearer to the countess, whose hand he took in his.

"Let us see, countess," said he; "it was then you who caused the arrest of Doctor Gilbert?"

Still, although asleep, the countess made one last effort snatched her hand from that of the king, and gathering up all her strength, —

"No," cried she, "I will not speak."

The king looked at Gilbert, as if to ask him which of the two would overcome the other, his will or that of Andrée.

Gilbert smiled.

"You will not speak?" said he.

And, his eyes fixed upon the sleeping Andrée, he advanced a step towards the arm-chair.

Andrée shuddered.

"Will you not speak?" added he, taking a second step, which diminished the distance that separated him from the countess.

Every muscle of Andrée's frame became rigid in a supreme effort of reaction.

"Ah! you will not speak, then?" said he, taking a third stride, which placed him at the side of Andrée, over whose head he placed his outstretched hand; "ah! you will not speak?"

Andrée was writhing in the most fearful convulsions.

"But take care, take care!" cried Louis XVI.; "you will kill her!"

"Fear nothing, sire; it is with the soul alone that I have to contend; the soul is struggling, but it will yield."

Then, lowering his hand, —

"Speak!" said he.

Andrée extended her arms, and made an effort to breathe, as if she had been under the pressure of a pneumatic machine.

"Speak!" repeated Gilbert, lowering his hand still more.

All the muscles of the young woman's body seemed about to burst. A fringe of froth appeared upon her lips, and a commencement of epilepsy convulsed her from head to foot.

"Doctor! doctor!" said the king, "take care!"

But he, without noticing the king, lowered his hand a third time, and, touching the top of the countess's head with the palm of that hand, —

"Speak!" said he; "it is my will."

Andrée, on feeling the touch of that hand, heaved a sigh; her arms fell motionless to her side; her head, which had been thrown backwards, fell forward upon her breast, and a copious flood of tears oozed through her closed eyelids.

"My God! my God! my God!" faltered she.

"Invoke the Lord; be it so. He who operates in the name of God does not fear God."

"Oh!" said the countess, "how I hate you!"

"Abhor me, if you will, but speak!"

"Sire! sire!" exclaimed Andrée, "tell him that he consumes me, that he devours me, that he kills me!"

"Speak!" said Gilbert.

Then he made a sign to the king that he might interrogate her.

"So that, countess," said the king, again taking her hand, "he whom you wished to arrest, and whom you caused to be arrested, was really the doctor himself?"

"Yes."

"And there was no mistake, no misunderstanding?"

"None."

"And the casket?"

"Well," articulated the countess, slowly, "could I allow that casket to remain in his possession?"

Gilbert and the king exchanged glances.

"And did you take it from him?" said Louis XVI.

"I had it taken from him."

"Oh! oh! tell me how that was managed, countess," said the king, forgetful of all ceremony, and kneeling down before Andrée. "You had it taken?"

"Yes."

"When, and by what means?"

"I ascertained that this Gilbert, who during sixteen years has already made two voyages to France, was about to make a third one, and this last time with the intention of remaining here."

"But the casket?" asked the king.

"I ascertained by means of the lieutenant of police, Monsieur de Crosne, that during one of his journeys he had bought some lands in the neighbourhood of Villers-Cotterêts; that the farmer who tenanted his lands enjoyed his whole confidence. I suspected that the casket might be left at his residence."

"What made you think so?"

"I went to see Mesmer. I made him put me to sleep, and I saw the casket while in that state."

"It was —"

"In a large clothes-press on the ground floor, hidden under some linen."

"This is wonderful!" said the king. "After that, tell me what took place."

"I returned to the house of Monsieur de Crosne, who, having been recommended to do so by the queen, gave me one of his most skilful agents."

"What was the name of this agent?" asked Gilbert.

Andrée shuddered, as if a hot iron had touched her.

"I ask you his name?" repeated Gilbert.

Andrée endeavoured to resist.

"His name; I will know it!" said the doctor.

"Wolfsfoot," she replied.

"After that?" asked the king.

"Well, then, yesterday morning this man got possession of the casket. That is all."

"No, it is not all," said Gilbert. "You must now tell the king where the casket is at this moment."

"Oh!" said Louis XVI., "you ask too much of her."

"No, sire."

"But by this Wolfsfoot, by means of Monsieur de Crosne, one might ascertain —"

"Oh! we shall know everything quicker and much better through the countess."

Andrée, by a convulsive movement, the object of which was doubtless to prevent the words from escaping her lips, clenched her teeth with such violence as almost to break them.

The king pointed out this nervous convulsion to the doctor.

Gilbert smiled.

He touched with his thumb and forefinger the lower part of the face of Andrée, whose muscles were relaxed at the same moment.

"In the first place, countess, tell the king clearly that this casket belonged to Doctor Gilbert"

"Yes, yes, it belongs to him," said the sleeping woman angrily.

"And where is it at this moment?" asked Gilbert. "Make haste! the king has not time to wait."

Andrée hesitated for a moment.

"At Wolfsfoot's house," said she.

Gilbert observed the hesitation, although it was scarcely perceptible.

"You are telling a falsehood!" said he, "or rather, you

are endeavouring to tell one. Where is the casket? I insist on knowing."

"At my house at Versailles," said Andrée, bursting into tears, with a nervous trembling which shook her whole frame, "at my house, where Wolfsfoot is waiting for me, as we had previously agreed to meet at eleven o'clock to-night."

Midnight was heard to strike.

"Is he still waiting there?"

"Yes."

"In which room is he?"

"They have just shown him into the drawing-room."

"What place does he occupy in the drawing-room?"

"He is standing, and leaning against the chimney-piece."

"And the casket?"

"It is on the table before him. Oh!"

"What is the matter?"

"Let us hasten to get him out of the house. Monsieur de Charny, who was not to return till to-morrow, will come back to-night, on account of the events that have taken place. I see him; he is at Sèvres. Make him go away, so that the count may not find him in the house."

"Your Majesty hears that; in what part of Versailles does Madame de Charny reside?"

"Where do you reside, countess?"

"On the Boulevard de la Reine, sire."

"Very well."

"Sire, your Majesty has heard everything. That casket belongs to me. Does the king order it to be returned to me?"

"Immediately, monsieur."

And the king, having drawn a screen before Madame de Charny, which prevented her from being seen, called the officer on duty, and gave him an order in a low voice.

CHAPTER XXIV.

ROYAL PHILOSOPHY.

A STRANGE pre-occupation for a king whose subjects were undermining his throne, the inquisitiveness of the erudite man applied to a physical phenomenon, while the most important political phenomenon was taking place that France had ever known, — that is to say, the transformation of a monarchy into a democracy. This sight, we say, of a king forgetting himself during the most terrible period of a tempest would certainly have caused the great minds of the time to smile, bent as they had been during three months on the solution of their problem.

While riot was raging in all its fury without, Louis, forgetting the terrible events of the day, the taking of the Bastille, the assassination of Flesselles, De Launay, and De Losme, the disposition of the National Assembly to revolt against the king, — Louis was concentrating his mind on this examination of a theory; and the revelations of this strange scene absorbed him no less than the most vital interests of his government.

And thus, as soon as he had given the order which we have mentioned to the captain of his guards, he returned to Gilbert, who was removing from the countess the excess of fluid with which he had charged her, in order that her slumber might be more tranquil than under the effects of this convulsive somnambulism.

For an instant the respiration of the countess became calm and easy as that of a sleeping child. Then Gilbert, with a single motion of his hand, reopened her eyes, and put her into a state of ecstasy.

It was then that one could see the extraordinary beauty of Andrée, in all its splendour. Being completely freed from all earthly agitations, the blood, which had for an instant rushed to her face, and which momentarily had coloured her cheeks, redescended to her heart, whose pulsations had recovered their natural state. Her face had again become pale, but of that beautiful pallor of the women of the East; her eyes, opened rather more than usual, were raised towards heaven, and left the pupils floating, as it were, in the pearl-like whiteness of their eye-balls; the nose, slightly expanded, appeared to inhale a purer atmosphere; and her lips, which had preserved all their vermilion, although her cheeks had lost a little of theirs, were slightly separated, and discovered a row of pearls of which the sweet moistness increased the brilliancy.

The head was gently thrown backwards with an inexpressible grace, almost angelic. It might have been said that this fixed look, increasing its scope of vision by its intensity, penetrated to the foot of the throne of God.

The king gazed at her as if dazzled. Gilbert turned away his head and sighed. He could not resist the desire to give Andrée this degree of superhuman beauty; and now, like Pygmalion—more unhappy even than Pygmalion, for he knew the insensibility of the beautiful statue—he trembled at the sight of his own production.

He made a sign without even turning his head towards Andrée, and her eyes closed instantly.

The king desired Gilbert to explain to him that marvellous state, in which the soul separates itself from the body, and soars, free, happy, and divine, above all terrestrial miseries.

Gilbert, like all men of truly superior genius, could pronounce the words so much dreaded by mediocrity, "I do not know." He confessed his ignorance to the king. He had produced a phenomenon which he could not explain. The fact itself existed, but the explanation of the fact could not be given.

"Doctor," said the king, on hearing this avowal of Gilbert, "this is another of those secrets which nature reserves for the learned men of another generation, and which will be studied thoroughly, like so many other mysteries which were thought insoluble. We call them mysteries: our fathers would have called them sorcery or witchcraft."

"Yes, sire," answered Gilbert, smiling, "and I should have had the honour to be burnt on the Place de Grève, for the greater glory of a religion which was not understood, by wise men without learning, and priests devoid of faith."

"And under whom did you study this science?" rejoined the king; "was it with Mesmer?"

"Oh, sire!" said Gilbert, smiling, "I had seen the most astonishing phenomena of the science ten years before the name of Mesmer was pronounced in France."

"Tell me, now: this Mesmer, who has revolutionised all France, was he, in your opinion, a charlatan? It seems to me that you operate much more simply than he. I have heard his experiments spoken of, and also those of Deslon and Puységur. You know all that has been said on the subject, whether idle stories or positive truths."

"I have carefully observed all these discussions, sire."

"Well, then, what do you think of the famous vat or tank?"

"I hope your Majesty will excuse me if I answer doubtfully to all you ask me with regard to the magnetic art. Magnetism has not yet become an art."

"Ah!"

"But it assuredly is a power, a terrific power, since it annihilates the will, since it isolates the soul from the body, and places the body of the somnambulist in the power of the magnetiser, while the former does not retain the power, nor even the desire to defend itself. As for me, sire, I have seen strange phenomena produced. I have produced many myself. Well, I nevertheless still doubt."

"How! you still doubt? You perform miracles, and yet you are in doubt?"

"No, I do not doubt, — I do not doubt. At this moment even, I have a proof before my eyes of an extraordinary and incomprehensible power. But when that proof has disappeared, when I am at home alone in my library, face to face with all that human science has written during three thousand years, when science says no, when the mind says no, when reason says no, I doubt."

"And did your master also doubt, doctor?"

"Perhaps he did, but he was less sincere than I. He did not express his doubt."

"Was it Deslon? Was it Puységur?"

"No, sire, no. My master was a man far superior to all the men you have named. I have seen him perform the most marvellous things, especially with regard to wounds. No science was unknown to him. He had impregnated his mind with Egyptian theories. He had penetrated the arcana of ancient Assyrian civilisation. He was a profound scholar, a formidable philosopher, having a great knowledge of human life, combined with a persevering will."

"Have I ever known him?" asked the king.

Gilbert hesitated a moment.

"I ask you whether I ever knew him?"

"Yes, sire."

"And you call him —"

"Sire," said Gilbert, "to pronounce that name before the king would perhaps render me liable to his displeasure. Now, especially at this moment, when the majority of Frenchmen are depreciating all royal authority, I would not throw a shade on the respect we all owe your Majesty."

"Name that man boldly, Doctor Gilbert; and be persuaded that I too have my philosophy, — a philosophy of sufficiently good material to enable me to smile at all the insults of the present, and all the threats of the future."

Gilbert still continued to hesitate.

The king approached him.

"Monsieur," said he to Gilbert, laughing, "call him Satan, if you will, I shall still find a shield to protect me from

him, — the one which your dogmatisers do not possess, — one that they never will possess, — one which I alone, perhaps, in this century possess, and bear without feeling shame, — religion.”

“Your Majesty believes as St. Louis did. It is true,” said Gilbert.

“And in that lies all my strength, I confess, doctor. I like science; I adore the results of materialism; I am a mathematician, as you well know; you know that the sum total of an addition or an algebraical formula fills my heart with joy, but when I meet people who carry algebra to atheism, I have in reserve my profound, inexhaustible, and eternal faith, — a faith which places me a degree above and a degree below them, — above them in good, and beneath them in evil. You see, then, doctor, that I am a man to whom everything may be said, a king who can hear anything.”

“Sire,” said Gilbert, with a sort of admiration, “I thank your Majesty for what you have just said to me; for you have almost honoured me with the confidence of a friend.”

“Oh! I wish,” the timid Louis hastened to exclaim, “I wish all Europe could hear me speak thus. If Frenchmen were to read in my heart all the energy of feeling, the tenderness, which it contains, I think they would oppose me less.”

The last portion of the king’s sentence, which showed that the king was irritated by the attack the royal prerogative had been subjected to, lowered Louis XVI. in the estimation of Gilbert.

He hastened to say, without attempting to spare the king’s feelings, —

“Sire, since you insist upon it, my master was the Count de Cagliostro.”

“Oh!” cried Louis, colouring, “that empiric!”

“That empiric! — yes, sire. Your Majesty is doubtless aware that the word you have just pronounced is one of the noblest used in science. *Empiric* means *the man who*

attempts. The practitioner, the profound thinker, — the man, in short, who is incessantly attempting after discoveries, — does all that God permits men to do that is glorious and beautiful. Let but a man *attempt* during his whole life, and his life will be well occupied."

"Ah, monsieur, this Cagliostro whom you defend was a great enemy of kings."

Gilbert recollected the affair of the necklace.

"Is it not rather the enemy of queens, your Majesty intended to say?"

Louis shuddered at this sharp home thrust.

"Yes," said he, "he conducted himself, in all the affair of Prince Louis de Rohan, in a manner which was more than equivocal."

"Sire, in that, as in other circumstances, Cagliostro carried out the human mission, — he sought his own ends. In science, in morals, in politics, there is neither good nor evil; there are only stated phenomena or accomplished facts. Nevertheless, I will not defend him, sire. I repeat it, the man may often have merited blame; perhaps some day this very blame may be considered as praise: posterity reconsiders the judgments of men. But I did not study under the man, sire, but under the philosopher, under the great physician."

"Well, well," said the king, who still felt the double wound his pride and heart had received, "well, but we are forgetting the Countess de Charny, and perhaps she is suffering."

"I will wake her up, sire, if your Majesty desires it; but I had wished that the casket might arrive here during her sleep."

"Why?"

"To spare her a too harsh lesson."

"Here is somebody coming at this moment," said the king, "wait."

In fact, the king's order had been punctually obeyed. The casket found at the hotel of the Countess de Charny,

in the possession of the agent, Wolfsfoot, was brought in to the royal cabinet, under the very eyes of the countess, who did not see it.

The king made a sign of satisfaction to the officer who brought the casket. The officer then left the room.

"Well," said Louis XVI.

"Well, then, sire, that is, in fact, the very casket which had been taken away from me."

"Open it," said the king.

"Sire, I am willing to do so, if your Majesty desires it; but I have only to forewarn your Majesty of one thing."

"What is that?"

"Sire, as I told your Majesty, this box contains only papers which are easily read, and might be taken, and on which depends the honour of a woman."

"And that woman is the countess?"

"Yes, sire. That honour will not be endangered while this matter is confined to the knowledge of your Majesty. Open it, sire," said Gilbert, approaching the casket, and presenting the key of it to the king.

"Monsieur," replied Louis XVI. coldly, "take away this box; it belongs to you."

"Thank you, sire, but what are we to do with the countess?"

"Oh, do not, above all, wake her up here. I wish to avoid all recriminations and painful scenes."

"Sire," said Gilbert, "the countess will only awake in the place where you wish her to be carried."

"Well, let her be taken to the queen's apartment, then."

Louis rang the bell. An officer entered the room.

"Captain," said he, "the Countess de Charny has just fainted here, on hearing the news from Paris. Have her taken to the queen's room."

"How long will it take to carry her there?" asked Gilbert of the king.

"About ten minutes," replied the latter.

Gilbert laid his hand on the countess.

"You will awake in three quarters of an hour," said he.

Two soldiers entered, the order having been given by the officer, who carried her away in an arm-chair.

"Now, Monsieur Gilbert, what more do you desire?" asked the king.

"Sire, I desire a favour which would draw me nearer to your Majesty, and procure me at the same time an opportunity to be useful to you."

The king endeavoured to divine what he could mean.

"Explain yourself," said he.

"I should like to be one of the physicians in ordinary to the king," replied Gilbert; "I should be in the way of no one; it is a post of honour, but rather a confidential than a brilliant one."

"Granted," said the king. "Adieu, Monsieur Gilbert. Ah! by the by, a thousand compliments to Necker. Adieu."

Then as he was leaving the room, —

"My supper!" cried Louis, whom no event; however important, could induce to forget his supper.

CHAPTER XXV.

IN THE QUEEN'S APARTMENTS.

WHILE the king was learning to oppose the revolution philosophically, by going through a course of occult sciences, the queen, who was a much more substantial and profound philosopher, had gathered around her in her large cabinet all those who were called her faithful adherents, doubtless because there had been no opportunity afforded to any one of them either to prove or to try his fidelity.

In the queen's circle, also, the events of that terrible day had been related in all their details.

She had even been the first to be informed of them, for, knowing her to be undaunted, they had not feared to inform her of the danger.

Around the queen were assembled generals, courtiers, priests, and ladies. Near the doors, and behind the tapestries which hung before them, might be seen groups of young officers, full of courage and ardour, who saw in all revolts a long desired opportunity to evince their prowess in presence of the fair sex, as in a tournament.

All of these, whether intimately connected with the court, or devoted servants of the monarchy, had listened with attention to the news from Paris, which had been related by Monsieur de Lambesq, who, having been present during those events, had hastened to Versailles with his regiment, still covered with the dust of the Tuileries, in order to state the real position of affairs to the affrighted courtiers, and thus afford them consolation; for many of them, although the misfortune was sufficiently serious, had greatly exaggerated it in their apprehension.

The queen was seated at a table. It was no longer the gentle and lovely bride, the guardian angel of France, whom we saw appear at the opening of this story, crossing the northern frontier, an olive-branch in her hand. It was no longer even that gracious and beautiful princess whom we saw one evening entering with the Princess de Lamballe into the mysterious dwelling of Mesmer, and seating herself, laughing and incredulous, near the symbolical vat, of which she had come to ask a revelation of the future.

No! it was the haughty and resolute queen, with frowning brow and scornful lip; it was a woman whose heart had allowed a portion of its love to escape from it, to harbour, instead of that sweet and vivifying element, the first drops of gall which, by constantly filtering into it, was finally to reach her blood.

It was, in short, the woman represented by the third portrait in the gallery of Versailles,—that is to say, no longer Marie Antoinette, no longer the Queen of France, but the woman who was now designated only by the name of the Austrian.

Behind her, in the shade, lay a motionless young woman, her head reclining on the cushion of a sofa, and her hand upon her forehead.

This was Madame de Polignac.

Perceiving Monsieur de Lambesq, the queen made one of those gestures indicative of unbounded joy, which mean, —
“At last we shall know all.”

Monsieur de Lambesq bowed, with a sign that asked pardon at the same time for his soiled boots, his dusty coat, and his sword, which, having been bent in his fall, could not be forced into its scabbard.

“Well, Monsieur de Lambesq,” said the queen, “have you just arrived from Paris?”

“Yes, your Majesty.”

“What are the people doing?”

“They are killing and burning.”

"Through maddening rage or hatred?"

"No, from sheer ferocity."

The queen reflected, as if she had felt disposed to be of his opinion with regard to the people. Then, shaking her head,—

"No, prince," said she, "the people are not ferocious; at least, not without a reason. Do not conceal anything from me. Is it madness? Is it hatred?"

"Well, I think it is hatred carried to madness, madame."

"Hatred of whom? Ah! I see you are hesitating again, prince. Take care; if you relate events in that manner, instead of applying to you as I do, I shall send one of my outriders to Paris; he will require one hour to go there, one to acquire information, one to return; and in the course of three hours, this man will tell me everything that has happened as accurately and as simply as one of Homer's heralds."

Monsieur de Dreux-Brézé stepped forward, with a smile upon his lips.

"But, madame," said he, "of what consequence to you is the hatred of the people? That can in no way concern you. The people may hate all, excepting you."

The queen did not even rebuke this piece of flattery.

"Come, come, prince," said she to Monsieur de Lambesq, "speak out."

"Well, then, madame, it is true the people are acted upon by hatred."

"Hatred of me?"

"Of everything that rules."

"Well said!—that is the truth! I feel it," exclaimed the queen, resolutely.

"I am a soldier, your Majesty," said the prince.

"Well! well! speak to us then as a soldier. Let us see what must be done."

"Nothing, madame."

"How! nothing!" cried the queen, taking advantage of the murmurs occasioned by these words among the wearers

of embroidered coats and golden sheathed swords of her company; "nothing! You, a Prince of Lorraine,—you can speak thus to the Queen of France at a moment when the people, according to your own confession, are killing and burning, and you can coolly say there is nothing to be done!"

A second murmur, but this time of approbation, followed the words of Marie Antoinette.

She turned round, fixed her gaze on all the circle which environed her, and among all those fiery eyes sought those which darted forth the brightest flames, as if she could read a greater proof of fidelity in them.

"Nothing!" continued the prince, "but allow the Parisian to become calm; and he will become so, for he is only warlike when he is exasperated. Why give him the honours of a struggle, and risk the chances of a battle? Let us keep quiet, and in three days there will no longer be a question of a commotion in Paris."

"But the Bastile, monsieur?"

"The Bastile! Its doors will be closed, and those who took it will be taken, that is all."

Some laughter was heard among the before silent group.

The queen continued, —

"Take care, prince; you are now reassuring me too much." And thoughtfully, her chin resting on the palm of her hand, she advanced towards Madame de Polignac, who, pale and sad, seemed absorbed in thought.

The countess had listened to all the news with visible fear; she only smiled when the queen stopped opposite to her and smiled; although this smile was pale and colourless as a fading flower.

"Well, countess," said the queen, "what do you say to all this?"

"Alas! nothing," she replied.

"How, nothing!"

"No."

And she shook her head with an indescribable sign of despair.

"Come, come," said the queen in a very low voice, and stooping to the ear of the countess, "our friend Diana is terrified."

Then she said aloud, —

"But where is Madame de Charny, the intrepid woman? We need her assistance to reassure us, I think."

"The countess was about to go out, when she was summoned to the king's apartments."

"Ah! the king's," absently answered Marie Antoinette.

And only then did the queen perceive the strange silence which pervaded all around her.

The truth was, these wonderful and incredible events, accounts of which had successively reached Versailles like repeated shocks, had prostrated the firmest hearts, perhaps more by astonishment than fear.

The queen understood that it was necessary to revive all these drooping spirits.

"Can no one advise me?" said she. "Be it so; I will advise myself."

They all drew nearer to Marie Antoinette.

"The people," said she, "are not bad at heart, they are only misled. They hate us because we are unknown to them; let us become better friends."

"To punish them, then," said a voice, "for they have doubted their masters, and that is a crime."

The queen looked in the direction from which the voice proceeded, and recognised Monsieur de Bezenval.

"Oh! it is you, Monsieur le Baron," said she; "do you come to give us your good counsel?"

"The advice is already given," said Bezenval, bowing.

"Be it so," said the queen, "the king will punish only as a tender father."

"Who loves well chastises well," said the baron.

Then, turning towards Monsieur de Lambesq, —

"Are you not of my opinion, prince? The people have committed several murders —"

"Which they unfortunately call retaliation," said a sweet voice, at the sound of which the queen turned in her seat.

"You are right, princess; but it is precisely in that that their error consists, my dear Lamballe; we shall be indulgent."

"But," replied the princess, in her mild manner, "before asking whether we must punish, I think we ought to ask whether we can conquer."

A general cry burst forth from those who were present, a cry of protestation against the truth which had just been spoken by those noble lips.

"Conquer! and where are the Swiss?" said one.

"And the Germans?" said another.

"And the body guards?" said a third.

"Can doubts be entertained about the army and the nobility?" exclaimed a young man wearing the uniform of a lieutenant in the Hussars of Bercheny. "Have we then deserved such a reproach? Do but consider, madame, that no later than to-morrow, if he chose, the king could assemble forty thousand men, throw these forty thousand men into Paris, and destroy the city. Remember that forty thousand faithful troops are worth half a million of revolted Parisians."

The young man who had just spoken these words had, without doubt, a good many other similar reasons to advance, but he stopped short on seeing the eyes of the queen fixed upon him. He had spoken from the centre of a group of officers, and his zeal had carried him farther than was consistent with etiquette and his rank.

He checked himself, accordingly, as we have already said, feeling quite ashamed at the impression his words had made.

But it was too late; the queen had already been struck with his enthusiastic manner.

"You understand the present condition of affairs, monsieur?" said she, kindly.

"Yes, your Majesty," said the young man, blushing, "I was at the Champs Élysées."

"Then, do not fear to speak: come nearer, monsieur."

The young man stepped forward, blushing, from the group

which opened to let him pass, and advanced towards the queen.

At the same moment, the Prince de Lambesq and Monsieur de Bezenval retired a step or two, as if they considered it beneath their dignity to attend this sort of council.

The queen did not pay, or did not appear to pay, any attention to this movement.

"You say, then, monsieur, that the king has forty thousand men?" asked she.

"Yes, your Majesty."

"In the environs of Paris?"

"At Saint-Denis, at Saint-Mandé, at Montmartre, and at Grenelle."

"Give me some details, monsieur,—some details," exclaimed the queen.

"Madame, the Prince de Lambesq and Monsieur de Bezenval can give you them with infinitely more accuracy than myself."

"Go on, monsieur. It pleases me to hear these details from your lips. Under whose orders are these forty thousand men?"

"In the first place, under the orders of Monsieur de Bezenval and Monsieur de Lambesq; then under those of the Prince de Condé, of Monsieur de Narbonne-Fritzlär, and Monsieur de Salkenaym."

"Is this true, prince?" asked the queen, turning towards Monsieur de Lambesq.

"Yes, your Majesty," answered the prince, bowing.

"On the heights of Montmartre," said the young man, "there is a complete park of artillery; in six hours the whole quarter of the town within the range of Montmartre could be laid in ashes. Let Montmartre give the signal to commence the fire; let it be answered by Vincennes; let ten thousand men debouch by the Champs Élysées, ten thousand more by the Barrière d'Enfer, ten thousand more by the Rue Saint-Martin, ten thousand more by the Bastille; make Paris hear our cannonading from the four cardinal

points, and she cannot hold her ground for twenty-four hours."

"Ah! here is a man who at all events explains his views frankly; here is at least a clear and regular plan. What do you think of it, Monsieur de Lambesq?"

"I think," answered the prince, disdainfully, "that the lieutenant of hussars is a perfect general."

"He is at least," said the queen, who saw the young officer turn pale with anger, — "he is at least a soldier who does not despair."

"I thank you, madame," said the young man, bowing. "I do not know what your Majesty's decision will be, but I beg you to consider me among those who are ready to die for you; and in so doing, I should only do that, I beg your Majesty to believe, which forty thousand soldiers are ready to do, as well as all our chiefs."

And having said these words, the young man saluted the prince courteously, who had almost insulted him.

This act of courtesy struck the queen still more than the protestations of fidelity which had preceded it.

"What is your name, monsieur?" asked she of the young officer.

"I am the Baron de Charny, madame," replied he, bowing.

"De Charny!" exclaimed Marie Antoinette, blushing in spite of herself; "are you then a relation of the Count de Charny?"

"I am his brother, madame."

And the young man bowed gracefully, even lower than he had done before.

"I ought," said the queen, recovering from her confusion, and casting a firm look around her, "I ought to have recognised you, from hearing your first words, as one of my most faithful servants. Thank you, baron. How is it that I now see you at court for the first time?"

"Madame, my elder brother, who is taking the place of my father, has ordered me to remain with the regiment, and during the seven years that I have had the honour of

serving in the army of the king I have only twice been at Versailles."

The queen looked for a considerable time at the young man's face.

"You resemble your brother," said she. "I shall reprimand him for having so long omitted to present you, and left you to present yourself at court."

And the queen turned in the direction of her friend the countess, who during all this scene had remained motionless and mute upon the sofa.

But it was not thus with the remainder of those present. The officers, electrified by the reception the queen had given to the young man, were exaggerating to the utmost among themselves their enthusiasm for the royal cause, and from every group expressions burst forth evincing a heroism capable of subjugating the whole of France.

Marie Antoinette made the most of these manifestations, which evidently flattered her secret wishes.

She preferred to struggle rather than to suffer, to die rather than to yield. With this view, as soon as the first news had reached her from Paris, she had determined upon a stubborn resistance to the rebellious spirit which threatened to swallow up all the prerogatives of the French monarchy.

If there is a blind and senseless degree of strength, it is that stimulated by figures and vain hopes.

A figure, followed by an agglomeration of zeros, will soon exceed all the resources of the universe.

The same may be said of the plans of a conspirator or a despot. On enthusiasm, which itself is based on imperceptible hope, gigantic conceptions are built, which evaporate before the first breath of wind, in less time than was required to condense them into a mist.

After hearing these few words pronounced by the Baron de Charny, after the enthusiastic hurrahs of the by-standers, Marie Antoinette could almost imagine herself at the head of a powerful army; she could hear the rolling of her

harmless artillery, and she rejoiced at the fear which they would doubtless occasion among the Parisians, and had already gained a victory which she thought decisive.

Around her, men and women beaming with youth, with confidence and love, were reckoning the number of those brilliant hussars, those heavy dragoons, those terrible Swiss, those well-equipped artillery-men, and laughed at the vulgar pikes and their coarse wooden handles, little thinking that on the points of these vile weapons were to be borne the noblest heads of France.

"As for me," murmured the Princess de Lamballe, "I am more afraid of a pike than of a gun."

"Because it is much uglier, my dear Thérèse," replied the queen, smiling. "But, at all events, compose yourself. Our Parisian pikemen are not a match for the famous Swiss pikemen of Morat; and the Swiss of the present day have something more than pikes; they have good muskets, with which they take good aim, thank Heaven!"

"Oh! as to that, I will answer for it," said Monsieur de Bezenval.

The queen turned round once more towards Madame de Polignac to see if all these assurances had restored her wonted tranquillity; but the countess appeared still paler and more trembling than before.

The queen, whose extreme tenderness of feeling often caused her to sacrifice her royal dignity for the sake of this friend, in vain seemed to solicit her to look more cheerful.

The young woman still continued gloomy, and appeared absorbed in the saddest thoughts. But this despondency only served to increase the queen's sorrow. The enthusiasm among the young officers maintained itself at the same pitch, and all of them, with the exception of the superior officers, were gathered round the Baron de Charny, and drawing up their plans for battle.

In the midst of this febrile excitement the king entered alone, unaccompanied by an usher, and with a smile upon his lips.

The queen, still greatly excited by the warlike emotions which she had aroused, rushed forward to meet him.

At the sight of the king all conversation had ceased, and was followed by the most perfect silence; every one expected a kingly word, — one of those words which electrify and subjugate.

When clouds are sufficiently loaded with electricity, the least shock, as is well known, is sufficient to produce a flash.

To the eyes of the courtiers, the king and queen, advancing to meet each other, appeared like two electric bodies from which the thunder must proceed.

They listened, and trembled, and eagerly waited to catch the first words which were to proceed from the royal lips.

"Madame," said Louis XVI., "amid all these events, they have forgotten to serve up my supper in my own apartment; be so kind as to have it brought here."

"Here?" exclaimed the queen, with an air of stupefaction.

"If you will permit it."

"But — sire —"

"You were conversing, it is true; but while at supper I shall converse also."

The mere word supper had chilled the enthusiasm of every one present. But on hearing the king's last words, — "at supper I shall converse also," — the young queen herself could hardly help thinking that so much calmness concealed some heroism.

The king doubtless thought by his tranquillity to overcome all the terror occasioned by the events that had taken place.

Undoubtedly the daughter of Maria Theresa could not conceive that at so critical a moment the son of St. Louis could still remain subject to the material wants of ordinary life.

Marie Antoinette was mistaken; the king was hungry, that was all.

CHAPTER XXVI.

HOW THE KING SUPPED ON THE FOURTEENTH OF
JULY, 1789.

ON a word from Marie Antoinette, the king's supper was served on a small table in the queen's own cabinet.

But the contrary of what the princess had hoped soon happened. Louis XVI. ordered every one to be silent, but it was only that he might not be disturbed while at supper.

While Marie Antoinette was endeavouring to revive the enthusiasm, the king was devouring a Périgord pie.

The officers did not think this gastronomical performance worthy of a descendant of Saint-Louis, and formed themselves into small groups, whose observations were not perhaps as respectful as circumstances ought to have demanded.

The queen blushed, and her impatience betrayed itself in all her movements. Her delicate, aristocratic, and nervous nature could not comprehend this domination of matter over mind.

She drew nearer to the king, with a view to bring those nearer to the table who had retired to a more distant part of the room.

"Sire," said she, "have you no orders to give?"

"Ah! ah!" said the king, his mouth full, "what orders, madame? Let us see; will you be our Egeria in this difficult moment?"

And while saying these words, he bravely attacked a partridge stuffed with truffles.

"Sire," said the queen, "Numa was a pacific king. Now, it is generally thought that what we need at present

is a warlike king; and if your Majesty is to take antiquity for his model, as you cannot become a Tarquin, you must be a Romulus."

The king smiled with a tranquillity which almost seemed holy.

"Are these gentlemen warlike also?" asked he.

And he turned towards the group of officers; and his eyes, being animated by the cheering influence of his meal, appeared to all present to sparkle with courage.

"Yes, sire," they all cried with one voice, "war! we only ask for war!"

"Gentlemen, gentlemen," said the king, "you do me in truth the greatest pleasure, by proving to me that, when occasion may require it, I may rely upon you. But I have for the moment not only a council, but also a stomach; the former will advise me what I ought to do, the second advises me to do what I am now doing."

And he laughed loudly, and handed his plate, full of fragments, to the officer who was in waiting, in exchange for a clean one.

A murmur of stupefaction and of rage passed like a shudder through the group of gentlemen, who only required a signal from the king to shed all their blood.

The queen turned round and stamped her foot.

The Prince de Lambesq immediately came to her.

"You see, madame," said he, "his Majesty no doubt thinks, as I do, that it is better to wait. It is prudence, —and although it is not one of mine, unfortunately, prudence is a necessary virtue in the times we live in."

"Yes, monsieur, yes; it is a very necessary virtue," said the queen, biting her lips till they bled.

With a death-like sadness she reclined against the chimney-piece, her eye lost in darkness, and her soul overcome by despair.

The singular contrast between the disposition of the king and that of the queen struck every one with astonishment. The queen could hardly restrain her tears, while the king

continued his supper with the proverbial appetite of the Bourbon family.

The room gradually became empty; the various groups melted away as does the snow in a garden before the rays of the sun, — the snow, beneath which the black and desolate earth soon makes its appearance here and there.

The queen, seeing this warlike group, upon which she relied so much, gradually disappear, imagined that all her power was vanishing; as in former times the breath of the Lord had melted those vast armies of Assyrians or Amalekites, which one single mist sufficed to swallow up in its darkness.

She was aroused from this species of torpor by the sweet voice of the Countess Jules, who approached her with Madame Diana de Polignac, her sister-in-law.

At the sound of this voice, the sweet future, with its flowers and palm leaves, returned to the mind of this haughty woman. A sincere and devoted friend was to her of more value than ten kingdoms.

"Oh! thou, thou," murmured she, clasping the Countess Jules in her arms; "I have then one friend left."

And the tears, which for so long a time had been restrained, burst forth from her eyelids, trickled down her cheeks, and inundated her bosom; but instead of being bitter, these tears were sweet, — instead of oppressing her, they disburdened her heart.

They both remained silent for a few moments, during which the queen continued to hold the countess in her arms.

It was the duchess who first broke this silence, while still holding her sister-in-law by the hand.

"Madame," said she, with a voice so timid that she almost appeared ashamed, "I do not think your Majesty will disapprove the project which I am about to submit to your notice."

"What project?" asked the queen, attentively; "speak, duchess, speak!"

And while preparing to listen to the Duchess Diana, the queen leaned upon the shoulder of her favourite, the countess.

"Madame," continued the duchess, "the opinion which I am about to pronounce comes from a person whose authority will not be doubted by your Majesty; it comes from her Royal Highness, Madame Adelaide, the queen's aunt."

"What a singular preamble, dear duchess," said the queen, gayly; "come, let us hear this opinion."

"Madame, circumstances are disheartening; the favours which our family enjoy from your Majesty have been much exaggerated; calumny stains the august friendship which you deign to grant us, in exchange for our respectful devotion."

"Well, then, duchess," said the queen, with a commencement of astonishment, "do you not think I have evinced sufficient courage? Have I not valiantly sustained my friends against public opinion, against the court, against the people, against the king himself?"

"Oh, madame, on the contrary! and your Majesty has so nobly sustained her friends that she has opposed her breast to every blow, so that to-day, when the danger has become great, terrible even, the friends so nobly defended by your Majesty would be cowardly and unfaithful servants if they did not prove themselves deserving of your favour."

"Ah! this is well, this is beautiful!" said Marie Antoinette, with enthusiasm, embracing the countess, whom she still pressed against her bosom, while holding the hand of Madame de Polignac in hers.

But both of them turned pale, instead of proudly raising their heads, after they had been thus caressed by their sovereign.

Madame Jules de Polignac made a movement to disengage herself from the arms of the queen; but the latter still pressed her to her heart, despite her efforts to disengage herself.

"But," stammered Madame Diana de Polignac, "your

Majesty does not perhaps well understand what we have the honour to make known to you, in order to enable you to ward off the blows which threaten your throne, your person perhaps, on account of the very friendship with which you honour us. There is a painful means, a bitter sacrifice to our hearts, but we must endure it; necessity commands it."

At these words, it was the queen's turn to become pale, for she no longer perceived courageous and faithful friendship, but fear, beneath this exordium and under the veil of this reserve. "Let us see," said she. "Speak, speak, duchess! what is this sacrifice?"

"Oh, the sacrifice is entirely on our side, madame," replied the latter. "We are, God knows for what reason, execrated in France; by disencumbering your throne, we shall restore all its splendour, all the warmth of the popular love, a love either extinguished or intercepted by our presence."

"You would leave me!" cried the queen, vehemently. "Who has said that? who has asked for that?"

And she cast a despairing look on the Countess Jules de Polignac, gently pushing her from her; the latter held down her head in great confusion.

"Not I," said the Countess Jules; "I, on the contrary, ask but to remain."

But these words were uttered in such a tone that they implied, "Order me to leave you, madame, and I will leave you."

O holy friendship, thou sacred chain which can link together the hearts of even a sovereign and her subject in indissoluble bonds! O holy friendship, thou engenderest more heroism than even love or ambition, those two noble maladies of the human heart! But thou canst not brook deceit. The queen at once shattered to atoms the adored altar she had raised to thee in her heart; she required but a look, one only look, to reveal to her that which during ten years she had not perceived, she had not even surmised,

—coldness and interested calculation, —excusable, justifiable, legitimate, perhaps; but what can excuse, justify, or legitimise, in the eyes of one who still fondly loves, the abandonment of the one who has ceased to love?

Marie Antoinette's only revenge for the pain which was thus inflicted on her was the ice-like coldness with which she gazed upon her friend.

"Ah, Duchess Diana! this, then, is your opinion?" cried she, compressing with her feverish hand the agitated pulsation of her heart.

"Alas! madame," answered the latter, "it is not my choice, it is not my will which dictates to me what I am to do; it is the law of destiny!"

"Yes, duchess," said Marie Antoniette. And, turning again towards the Countess Jules, "And you, countess, what say you to this?"

The countess replied by a burning tear, as if from a remorseful pang; but she had exhausted all her strength in the effort she had made.

"Well," said the queen, "well, it is gratifying to my feelings to see how much I am beloved. Thank you, my dear countess; yes, you incur great danger here; the anger of the people no longer knows any bounds; yes, you are all in the right, and I alone was foolish. You ask to remain, —that is pure devotedness; but I cannot accept such a sacrifice."

The Countess Jules raised her beautiful eyes and looked at the queen. But the queen, instead of reading the devotedness of a friend in them, could only perceive the weakness of the woman.

"Thus, duchess," replied the queen, "*you* are resolved to leave me." And she emphasised the word "*you*."

"Yes, your Majesty."

"Doubtless for some one of your estates — a distant — a very distant one?"

"Madame, in going away, in leaving you, it would be as painful to travel fifty leagues as one hundred and fifty."

"But do you, then, intend to go into some foreign country?"

"Alas! yes, madame."

A suppressed sigh tore the very depths of the queen's heart, but it did not escape her lips.

"And where are you going?"

"To reside on the banks of the Rhine, madame."

"Well, you speak German, duchess," said the queen, with a look of indescribable sadness, "and it was I who taught it you. The friendship of your queen will at least have been useful to you to that extent, and I rejoice at it."

Then, turning to the Countess Jules, —

"I do not wish to separate you, my dear countess," said she. "You desire to remain here, and I deeply appreciate that desire. But I — I, who fear for you — I insist on your departure — I order you to leave me."

And, having said these words, she suddenly stopped, choked by emotions which, in spite of her heroism, she would perhaps not have had the power to control, had not she heard at that moment the voice of the king, who had taken no part whatever in what we have just been relating.

The king was at his dessert.

"Madame," said the king, "there is somebody in your apartment; they are seeking you."

"But, sire," exclaimed the queen, throwing aside every other feeling but that of royal dignity, "in the first place, you have orders to give! Let us see; only three persons remain here; but they are those with whom you have to deal, — Monsieur de Lambesq, Monsieur de Bezenval, and Monsieur de Broglie. Give your orders, sire; give your orders."

The king raised his heavy eyes, and appeared to hesitate.

"What do you think of all this, Monsieur de Broglie?" said he.

"Sire," replied the old marshal, "if you withdraw your army from the sight of the Parisians, it will be said that it was beaten by them. If you leave it in their presence, your army must beat them."

"Well said!" exclaimed the queen, grasping the marshal's hand.

"Well said!" cried Monsieur de Bezenval.

The Prince de Lambesq was the only person present who shook his head.

"Well! and after that?" said the king.

"Command: march!" cried the old marshal.

"Yes: march!" cried the queen.

"Well, then, since you all wish it, march!" said the king.

At that moment a note was handed to the queen; its contents were as follows:—

"In the name of Heaven, madame, no rashness! I await an audience of your Majesty."

"His writing!" murmured the queen.

Then, turning round, she said in a low tone to the woman who had brought the note, —

"Is Monsieur de Charny in my room?"

"He has just arrived, completely covered with dust, and I even think with blood," answered the confidante.

"One moment, gentlemen!" exclaimed the queen to Monsieur de Bezenval and Monsieur de Broglie; "wait for me here, I shall return!"

And she passed into her own apartment in great haste.

The king did not even move his head.

CHAPTER XXVII

OLIVIER DE CHARNY.

On entering her dressing-room, the queen found the person there who had written the note brought by her waiting-woman.

He was a man thirty-five years of age, of lofty stature, with a countenance which indicated strength and resolution; his grayish-blue eye, sharp and piercing as that of the eagle, his straight nose, his prominent chin, gave a martial character to his physiognomy, which was enhanced by the elegance with which he wore the uniform of a lieutenant in the body guards.

His hands were still trembling under his torn and ruffled cambric cuffs.

His sword had been bent, and could hardly be replaced in the scabbard.

On the arrival of the queen, he was pacing hurriedly up and down the dressing-room, absorbed by a thousand feverish and agitated thoughts.

Marie Antoinette walked straight to him.

"Monsieur de Charny!" she exclaimed, "Monsieur de Charny, you here!"

And seeing that the person whom she was addressing bowed respectfully, according to etiquette, she made a sign to her waiting-woman, who withdrew, and closed the doors.

The queen scarcely waited for the doors to be closed, when, seizing the hand of Monsieur de Charny with vehemence,—

"Count," cried she, "why are you here?"

"Because I considered it my duty to come, madame," said the count.

"No; your duty was to fly Versailles; it was to do what we had agreed, to obey me; it is, in fact, to do as all my friends are doing who fear to share my fate. Your duty is to sacrifice nothing to my destiny; your duty is to separate yourself from me!"

"To separate myself from you?" said he.

"Yes; to fly from me."

"And who, then, flies from you, madame?"

"Those who are prudent."

"I think myself very prudent, madame, and that is why I now come to Versailles."

"And from where do you come?"

"From Paris."

"From revolted Paris?"

"From boiling, intoxicated, and ensanguined Paris."

The queen covered her face with both her hands.

"Oh!" said she, "no one, not even you, will then come to bring me some good news."

"Madame, in the present circumstances, ask your messengers to tell you but one thing, — the truth."

"And is it the truth you have just been telling me?"

"As I do always, madame."

"You have an honest soul, monsieur, and a stout heart."

"I am a faithful subject, madame, that is all."

"Well, then, spare me for the moment, my friend; do not tell me a single word. You have arrived at a moment when my heart was breaking. My friends to-day for the first time overwhelm me with that truth which you have always told me. Oh! it was this truth, count, it was impossible for them to withhold it from me any longer. It bursts forth everywhere: in the heavens, which are red; in the air, which is filled with sinister noises; in the physiognomy of the courtiers, who are pale and serious. No, no, count, for the first time in your life, tell me not the truth."

The count looked at the queen with amazement.

"Yes, yes," said she; "you who know me to be courageous, you are astonished, are you not? Oh! you are not yet at the end of your astonishment."

Monsieur de Charny allowed an inquiring gesture to escape him.

"You will see by and by," said the queen, with a nervous laugh.

"Does your Majesty suffer?" asked the count.

"No, no, monsieur. Come and sit down near me; and not a word more about those dreadful politics. Try to make me forget them."

The count obeyed, with a sad smile. Marie Antoinette placed her hand upon his forehead.

"Your forehead burns," said she.

"Yes, I have a volcano in my head."

"Your hand is icy cold."

And she pressed the count's hand between both hers.

"My heart is affected with a deathlike coldness," said he.

"Poor Olivier! I had told you so. Let us forget it. I am no longer queen; I am no longer threatened; I am no longer hated. No, I am no longer a queen. I am a woman, that is all. What is the whole universe to me? One heart that loves me would suffice for me."

The count fell on his knees before the queen, and kissed her feet with the respect the Egyptians had for the goddess Isis.

"Oh, count, my only friend!" said the queen, trying to raise him up, "do you know what the Duchess Diana is about to do?"

"She is going to emigrate," answered Charny, without hesitating.

"He has guessed the truth," exclaimed Marie Antoinette; "he has guessed it. Alas! was it, then, possible to guess it?"

"Oh, certainly, madame," answered the count; "imagine anything at such a moment as this."

"But you and your friends," exclaimed the queen, "why do you not emigrate, if you consider it so natural a step?"

"In the first place, madame, I do not emigrate because I am profoundly devoted to your Majesty, and because I have promised, not to you, but to myself, that I will not quit you for a single instant during the impending storm. My brothers will not emigrate, because my conduct will be the model on which they will regulate theirs. In fine, Madame de Charny will not emigrate, because she loves your Majesty sincerely, at least so I believe."

"Yes, Andrée has a very noble heart," said the queen, with perceptible coldness.

"That is the reason why she will not leave Versailles," answered De Charny.

"Then I shall always have you near me," said the queen, in the same icy tone, which she varied so as to express either her jealousy or her disdain.

"Your Majesty has done me the honour to make me lieutenant of the guards," said the Count de Charny; "my post is at Versailles. I should not have left my post if your Majesty had not entrusted me with the care of the Tuileries. 'It is a necessary exile,' said the queen to me, and I accepted that exile. Now, in all this, your Majesty well knows the Countess de Charny has neither reprovèd the step, nor was she consulted with regard to it."

"It is true," replied the queen, in the same freezing tone.

"To-day," continued the count, with intrepidity, "I think my post is no longer at the Tuileries, but at Versailles. Well, may it not displease the queen, I have violated my orders, thus selecting the service I prefer; and here I am. Whether Madame de Charny be alarmed or not at the complexion of events, — whether it be her desire to emigrate or not, — I will remain near the queen, unless, indeed, the queen breaks my sword; in which case, having no longer the right to fight and to die for her on the floor of Versailles, I shall still have that of sacrificing it on its threshold, on the pavement."

The young man pronounced these simple words so valiantly and so loyally, they emanated so evidently from the depths of his heart, that the queen appeared suddenly to lose her haughtiness, a retreat behind which she had just concealed feelings more human than royal.

"Count," said she, "never pronounce that word again. Do not say that you will die for me, for in truth I know that you would do as you say."

"Oh, I shall always say it, on the contrary!" exclaimed Monsieur de Charny. "I shall say it to every one, and in every place. I shall say it, and I shall do it, because the time has come, I fear, when all who have been attached to the kings of this earth must die."

"Count! count! what is it gives you this fatal forewarning?"

"Alas! madame," replied De Charny, shaking his head, "and I too, during that fatal American war, I too was affected like the rest with that fever of independence which pervaded all society. I too wished to take an active part in the emancipation of the slaves, as it was customary to say in those days; and I was initiated into the secrets of masonry. I became affiliated with a secret society, with the Lafayettes and the Lameths. Do you know what the object of this society was, madame? The destruction of thrones. Do you know what it had for its motto? Three letters, — L. P. D."

"And what do these letters signify?"

"*Lilia pedibus destrue!* Trample the lilies underfoot!"

"Then what did you do?"

"I withdrew with honour. But for one who withdrew from the society, there were twenty who applied to be admitted into it. Well, then, what is happening to-day, madame, is the prologue to the grand drama which has been preparing in silence and in darkness for twenty years. At the head of the men who are stimulating Paris to resistance, who govern the Hôtel de Ville, who occupy the Palais Royal, and who took the Bastille, I recognised the

countenances of my former affiliated brethren. Do not deceive yourself, madame; all the events which have just taken place are not the results of chance; they are outbreaks which had been planned for years."

"Oh, you think so! — you think so, my friend!" exclaimed the queen, bursting into tears.

"Do not weep, madame, but endeavour to comprehend the present crisis," said the count.

"You wish me to comprehend it!" continued Marie Antoinette. "I, the queen, — I, who was born the sovereign of twenty-five millions of men, — you wish me to understand how these twenty-five millions of subjects, born to obey me, should revolt and murder my friends! No, that I shall never comprehend."

"And yet it is absolutely necessary for you to understand it, madame; for the moment this obedience becomes a burden to these subjects, to these men born to obey you, you become their enemy; and until they have the strength to devour you, to do which they are sharpening their famished teeth, they will devour your friends, still more detested than you are."

"And, perhaps, you will next tell me that they are right, most sage philosopher," exclaimed the queen, imperiously, her eyes dilated, and her nostrils quivering with anger.

"Alas! yes, madame, they are right," said the count, in his gentle and affectionate voice; "for when I drive along the Boulevards, with my beautiful English horses, my coat glittering with gold, and my attendants covered with more silver than would be necessary to feed three families, your people, that is to say, those twenty-five millions of starving men, ask themselves of what use I am to them, — I, who am only a man like themselves."

"You serve them with this, marquis," exclaimed the queen, seizing the hilt of the count's sword; "you serve them with the sword that your father wielded so heroically at Fontenoy, your grandfather at Steinkirk, your great-grandfather at Lens and at Rocroi, your ancestors at Ivry,

at Marignan, and at Agincourt. The nobility serves the French nation by waging war. By war, the nobility has earned, at the price of its blood, the gold which decks its garments, the silver which covers its liveries. Do not, therefore, ask yourself, Olivier, how you serve the people, you who wield in your turn, and bravely too, the sword which has descended to you from your forefathers."

"Madame! — madame!" said the count, shaking his head, "do not speak so much of the blood of the nobility: the people, too, have blood in their veins; go and see it running in streams on the Place de la Bastille; go and count their dead, stretched out on the crimsoned pavement, and consider that their hearts, which now no longer beat, throbbed with as much feeling as that of a knight on the day when your cannon were thundering against them; on the day when, seizing a new weapon in their unskilful hands, they sang in the midst of grape-shot, — a thing which even our bravest grenadiers do not always. Ah! madame, my sovereign, look not on me, I entreat you, with that frowning eye. What is a grenadier? It is a gilt blue coat, covering the heart of which I was speaking to you a moment since. Of what importance is it to the bullet which pierces and kills, that the heart be covered with blue cloth or with a linen rag? Of what importance is it to the heart which is pierced through, whether the cuirass which protected it was cloth or canvas? The time is come to think of all that, madame. You have no longer twenty-five millions of subjects; you have no longer even twenty-five millions of men. You have twenty-five millions of soldiers."

"Who will fight against me, count?"

"Yes, against you; for they are fighting for liberty, and you stand between them and liberty."

A long silence followed the words of the count. The queen was the first to break it.

"In fine," said she, "you have told me this truth, which I had begged you not to tell me."

"Alas ! madame," replied Charny, "under whatever form my devotion may conceal it, under whatever veil my respect disguises it, in spite of me, in spite of yourself, examine it, listen to it, think of it. The truth is there, madame, is there forever, and you can no longer banish it from your mind, whatever may be your efforts to the contrary. Sleep, — sleep to forget it, and it will haunt your pillow, will become the phantom of your dreams, a reality at your awakening."

"Oh, count," said the queen, proudly, "I know a sleep which it cannot disturb."

"As for that sleep, madame, I do not fear it more than does your Majesty, and perhaps I desire it quite as much."

"Oh," exclaimed the queen, in despair, "according to you, it is then our sole refuge ?"

"Yes ; but let us do nothing rashly, madame. Let us go no faster than our enemies, and we shall go straight to that sleep by the fatigues which we shall have to endure during so many stormy days."

And a new silence, still more gloomy than the first, appeared to weigh down the spirits of the two speakers.

They were seated, he near her, and she near him. They touched each other, and yet between them there was an immense abyss, for their minds viewed the future in a different light.

The queen was the first to return to the subject of their conversation, but indirectly. She looked fixedly at the count. Then, —

"Let us see, monsieur," said she. "One word as to ourselves, and you will tell me all — all — all. You understand me ?"

"I am ready to answer you, madame."

"Can you swear to me that you came here only for my sake ?"

"Oh, do you doubt it ?"

"Will you swear to me that Madame de Charny had not written to you ?"

"She?"

"Listen to me. I know that she was going out. I know that she had some plan in her mind. Swear to me, count, that it was not on her account that you returned."

At this moment, a knock, or rather a scratch, at the door was heard.

"Come in," said the queen.

The waiting-woman again appeared.

"Madame," said she, "the king has just finished his supper."

The count looked at Marie Antoinette with astonishment.

"Well," said she, shrugging her shoulders, "what is there astonishing in that? Must the king not take his supper?"

Olivier frowned.

"Tell the king," replied the queen, without at all disturbing herself, "that I am just receiving news from Paris, and that I shall communicate them to him when I have received them."

Then, turning towards Charny, —

"Go on," said she; "now that the king has supped, it is but natural that he should digest his food."

CHAPTER XXVIII.

OLIVIER DE CHARNY.

THIS interruption had only caused a momentary suspension in the conversation, but had changed in nothing the two-fold sentiment of jealousy which animated the queen at this moment—jealousy of love as a woman—jealousy of power as a queen.

Hence it resulted that the conversation, which seemed exhausted during its first period, had, on the contrary, only been slightly glanced at, and was about to be revived more sharply than ever; as in a battle, where, after the cessation of the first fire, which had commenced the action on a few points, the fire which decides the victory soon becomes general all along the line.

The count, moreover, as things had arrived at this point, seemed as anxious as the queen to come to an explanation; for which reason, the door being closed again, he was the first to resume the conversation.

“You asked me if it was for Madame de Charny that I had come back,” said he. “Has your Majesty then forgotten that engagements were entered into between us, and that I am a man of honour?”

“Yes,” said the queen, holding down her head, “yes, we have made engagements; yes, you are a man of honour; yes, you have sworn to sacrifice yourself to my happiness, and it is that oath which most tortures me; for in sacrificing yourself to my happiness, you immolated at the same time a beautiful woman and a noble character,—another crime!”

"Oh, madame! now you are exaggerating the accusation. I only wish you to confess that I have kept my word as a gentleman."

"It is true; I am insensate; forgive me —"

"Do not call a crime that which originated in chance and necessity. We have both deplored this marriage, which alone could shield the honour of the queen. As for this marriage, there only remains for me to endure it, as I have done for many years."

"Yes," exclaimed the queen. "But do you think that I do not perceive your grief, that I do not understand your sorrow, which evince themselves in the shape of the highest respect? Do you think that I do not see all this?"

"Do me the favour, madame," said the count, bowing, "to communicate to me what you see, in order that, if I have not suffered enough myself, and made others suffer enough, I may double the amount of suffering for myself, and for all those who surround me, as I feel certain of ever falling short of what I owe you."

The queen held out her hand to the count. The words of the young man had an irresistible power, like everything that emanates from a sincere and impassioned heart.

"Command me, then, madame," rejoined he; "I entreat you, do not fear to lay your commands upon me."

"Oh! yes, yes, I know it well. I am wrong; yes, forgive me; yes, it is true. But if you have anywhere some hidden idol to whom you offer up mysterious incense, — if for you there is in some corner of the world an adored woman, — Oh! I no longer dare to pronounce that word, — it strikes me with terror; and I fear that the syllables which compose it should strike the air and vibrate in my ear. Well, then, if such a woman does exist, concealed from every one, do not forget that you have publicly, in the eyes of others as in your own, a young and beautiful wife, whom you surround with care and attentions, a wife who leans upon your arm, and who, while leaning on your arm, leans at the same time on your heart."

Olivier knit his brow, and the delicate lines of his face assumed for a moment a severe aspect.

"What do you ask, madame?" said he; "do I separate myself from the Countess de Charny? You remain silent; is that the reason, then? Well, then, I am ready to obey this order, even; but you know that she is alone in the world,—she is an orphan. Her father, the Baron de Taverney, died last year, like a worthy knight of the olden time, who wishes not to see that which is about to take place in ours. Her brother—you know that her brother, Maison-Rouge, makes his appearance once a year, at most—comes to embrace his sister, to pay his respects to your Majesty, and then goes away, without any one knowing what becomes of him."

"Yes, I know all that."

"Consider, madame, that this Countess de Charny, were God to remove me from this world, could resume her maiden name, and the purest angel in heaven could not detect in her dreams, in her thoughts, a single unholy word or thought."

"Oh! yes, yes," said the queen. "I know that your Andrée is an angel upon earth; I know that she deserves to be loved. That is the reason why I think she has a brilliant future before her, while mine is hopeless! Oh! no, no! Come, count, I beg of you, say not another word. I no longer speak to you as a queen,—forgive me. I forget myself, but what would you have? There is in my soul a voice which always sings happiness, joy, and love, although it is too often assailed by those sinister voices which speak of nothing but misfortune, war, and death. It is the voice of my youth, which I have survived. Charny, forgive me, I shall no longer be young, I shall no longer smile, I shall no longer love!"

And the unhappy woman covered her burning eyes with her thin and delicate hands, and the tear of a queen filtered, brilliant as a diamond, between each one of her fingers.

The count once more fell on his knees before her.

"Madame, in the name of Heaven!" said he, "order me to leave you, to fly from you, to die for you, but do not let me see you weep!"

And the count himself could hardly refrain from sobbing as he spoke.

"It is all over," said Marie Antoinette, raising her head, and speaking gently, with a smile replete with grace.

And, with a beautiful movement, she threw back her thick powdered hair, which had fallen on her neck, white as the driven snow.

"Yes, yes! it is over," continued the queen; "I shall not afflict you any more; let us throw aside all these follies. Great God! it is strange that the woman should be so weak, when the queen so much needs to be firm. You come from Paris, do you not? Let us converse about it. You told me some things that I have forgotten; and yet they were very serious, were they not, Monsieur de Charny?"

"Be it so, madame; let us return to that fatal subject; for, as you observe, what I have to tell you is very serious. Yes, I have just arrived from Paris, and I was present at the downfall of the monarchy."

"I was right to request you to return to *serious* matters, and most assuredly, count, you make them more than sufficiently gloomy. A successful insurrection, do you call that the downfall of the monarchy? What! is it because the Bastille has been taken, Monsieur de Charny, that you say the monarchy is abolished? Oh! you do not reflect that the Bastille was founded in France only in the fourteenth century, while monarchy has been taking root in the world during the last six thousand years."

"I should be well pleased to deceive myself in this matter, madame," replied the count, "and then, instead of afflicting your Majesty's mind, I should bring to you the most consoling news. Unfortunately, the instrument will not produce any other sounds but those for which it was intended."

"Let us see, let us see, I will sustain you, I who am but a woman; I will put you on the right path."

"Alas! I ask for nothing better."

"The Parisians have revolted, have they not?"

"Yes."

"In what proportion?"

"In the proportion of twelve to fifteen."

"How do you arrive at this calculation?"

"O, very easily; the people form twelve fifteenths of the body of the nation; there remain two fifteenths for the nobility and one for the clergy."

"Your calculations are exact, count, and you have them at your fingers' ends. Have you read the works of Monsieur and Madame de Necker?"

"Those of Monsieur Necker, yes, madame."

"Well, the proverb holds good," said the queen gayly: "we are never betrayed but by our own friends. Well, then! here is my own calculation, — will you listen to it?"

"With all respect."

"Among these twelve fifteenths there are six of women, are there not?"

"Yes, your Majesty. But —"

"Do not interrupt me. We said there were six fifteenths of women, so let us say six; two of indifferent or incapable old men, — is that too much?"

"No."

"There still remain four fifteenths, of which you will allow that at least two are cowards or lukewarm individuals. I flatter the French nation. But finally there remain two fifteenths; I will grant you that they are furious, robust, brave, and warlike. These two fifteenths let us consider them as belonging to Paris only, for it is needless to speak of the provinces, is it not? It is only Paris that requires to be retaken?"

"Yes, madame. But —"

"Always but. — Wait a moment. You can reply when I have concluded."

Monsieur de Charny bowed.

"I therefore estimate," continued the queen, "the two fifteenths of Paris at one hundred thousand men, — is that sufficient?"

This time the count did not answer. The queen rejoined, —

"Well, then, to these hundred thousand men, badly armed, badly disciplined, and but little accustomed to battle, hesitating, because they know they are doing wrong, I can oppose fifty thousand men, known throughout Europe for their bravery, with officers like you, Monsieur de Charny; besides that sacred cause which is denominated divine right, and, in addition to all this, my own firm soul, which it is easy to move, but difficult to break."

The count still remained silent.

"Do you think," continued the queen, "that, in a battle fought in such a cause, two men of the people are worth more than one of my soldiers?"

Charny said nothing.

"Speak, — answer me! Do you think so?" exclaimed the queen, growing impatient.

"Madame," answered the count, at last, throwing aside on this order from the queen the respectful reserve which he had so long maintained, "on a field of battle, where these hundred thousand men would be isolated, undisciplined and badly armed as they are, your fifty thousand soldiers would defeat them in half an hour."

"Ah!" said the queen, "I was then right."

"Wait a moment. But it is not as you imagine. And, in the first place, your hundred thousand insurgents in Paris are five hundred thousand."

"Five hundred thousand?"

"Quite as many. You had omitted the women and children in your calculation. Oh, Queen of France! oh, proud and courageous woman! consider them as so many men, these women of Paris; the day will perhaps come when they will compel you to consider them as so many demons."

"What can you mean, count?"

"Madame, do you know what part a woman plays in a civil war? No, you do not. Well, I will tell you; and you will see that two soldiers against each woman would not be too many."

"Count, have you lost your senses?"

Charny smiled sadly.

"Did you see them at the Bastile," asked he, "in the midst of the fire, in the midst of the shot, crying to arms, threatening with their fists your redoubtable Swiss soldiers, fully armed and equipped, uttering maledictions over the bodies of the slain, with that voice that excites the hearts of the living? Have we not seen them boiling the pitch, dragging cannon along the streets, giving cartridges to those who were eager for the combat, and to the timid combatants a cartridge and a kiss? Do you know that as many women as men trod the drawbridge of the Bastile, and that at this moment, if the stones of the Bastile are falling, it is by pickaxes wielded by women's hands? Ah! madame, do not overlook the women of Paris, take them into consideration; think also of the children who cast bullets, who sharpen swords, who throw paving-stones from a sixth story; think of them, for the bullet which was cast by a child may kill your best general from afar off, for the sword which it has sharpened will cut the hamstrings of your war horses, for the clouds of stones which fall as from the skies will crush your dragoons and your guards; consider the old men, madame, for if they have no longer the strength to raise a sword, they have still enough to serve as shields. At the taking of the Bastile, madame, there were old men; do you know what they did, those aged men whom you affect to despise? They placed themselves before the young men, who steadied their muskets on their shoulders, that they might take sure aim, so that the balls of your Swiss killed the helpless aged man, whose body served as a rampart to the vigorous youth. Include the aged men, for it is they who for the last three hun-

dred years have related to succeeding generations the insults suffered by their mothers, the barrenness of their fields, caused by the devouring of their crops by the noblemen's game; the odium attached to their caste, crushed down by feudal privileges; and then the sons seize a hatchet, a club, a gun, — in short, any weapon within their reach, and sally out to kill, fully charged with the curses of the aged against all this tyranny, as the cannon is loaded with powder and iron at Paris at this moment. Men, women, old men, and children, are all crying, 'Liberty! deliverance!' Count everything that has a voice, madame, and you may estimate the number of combatants in Paris at eight hundred thousand souls."

"Three hundred Spartans defeated the army of Xerxes, Monsieur de Charny."

"Yes; but to-day your three hundred Spartans have increased to eight hundred thousand, and your fifty thousand soldiers compose the army of Xerxes."

The queen raised her head, her hands convulsively clenched, and her face burning with shame and anger.

"Oh! let me fall from my throne," said she, "let me be torn to pieces by your five hundred thousand Parisians, but do not suffer me to hear a Charny, a man devoted to me, speak to me thus."

"If he speaks to you thus, madame, it is because it is necessary: for this Charny has not in his veins a single drop of blood that is unworthy of his ancestors, or that is not all your own."

"Then let him march upon Paris with me, and there we will die together."

"Ignominiously," said the count, "without the possibility of a struggle. We shall not even fight; we shall disappear like the Philistines or the Amalekites. March upon Paris! but you seem to be ignorant of a very important thing: it is at the moment we shall enter Paris the houses will fall upon us as did the waves of the Red Sea upon Pharaoh; and you will leave in France a name which

will be accursed, and your children will be killed like the cubs of a wolf."

"How then should I fall, count?" said the queen, with haughtiness; "teach me, I entreat you."

"As a victim, madame," respectfully replied Monsieur de Charny; "as a queen, smiling and forgiving those who strike the fatal blow. Ah! if you had five hundred thousand men like me, I should say, 'Let us set out on our march! let us march to-night! let us march this very instant!' And to-morrow you would reign at the Tuileries, — to-morrow you would have reconquered your throne."

"Oh!" exclaimed the queen, "even you have given way to despair, — you, in whom I had founded all my hopes."

"Yes, I have despaired, madame, because all France thinks as Paris does; because your army, if it were victorious in Paris, would be swallowed up by Lyons, Rouen, Lisle, Strasbourg, Nantes, and a hundred other devouring cities. Come, come, take courage, madame, return your sword into its scabbard."

"Ah! was it for this," cried the queen, "that I have gathered round me so many brave men? — was it for this that I have inspired them with so much courage?"

"If that is not your opinion, madame, give your orders, and we will march upon Paris this very night. Say, what is your pleasure?"

There was so much devotion in this offer of the count, that it intimidated the queen more than a refusal would have done. She threw herself in despair on a sofa, where she struggled for a considerable time with her haughty soul.

At length, raising her head, —

"Count," said she, "do you desire me to remain inactive?"

"I have the honour to advise your Majesty to remain so."

"It shall be so: come back."

"Alas! madame, have I offended you?" said the count,

looking at the queen with a sorrowful expression, but in which beamed indescribable love.

"No: your hand."

The count bowed gracefully, and gave his hand to the queen.

"I must scold you," said Marie Antoinette, endeavouring to smile.

"For what reason, madame?"

"How! you have a brother in the army, and I have only been accidentally informed of it."

"I do not comprehend."

"This evening, a young officer of the Hussars of Bercheny —"

"Ah! my brother Georges!"

"Why have you never spoken to me of this young man? Why has he not a high rank in a regiment?"

"Because he is yet quite young and inexperienced; because he is not worthy of command as a chief officer; because, in fine, if your Majesty has condescended to look so low as upon me who am called Charny to honour me with your friendship, it is not a reason that my relations should be advanced to the prejudice of a crowd of brave noblemen more deserving than my brothers."

"Have you then still another brother?"

"Yes, madame; and one who is as ready to die for your Majesty as the two others."

"Does he not need anything?"

"Nothing, madame. We have the happiness to have not only our lives, but also a fortune, to lay at the feet of your Majesty."

While he was pronouncing these last words, the queen, who was much moved by a trait of such delicate probity, and he himself palpitating with affection caused by the gracious kindness of her Majesty, they were suddenly disturbed in their conversation by a groan from the adjoining room.

The queen rose from her seat, went to the door, and

screamed aloud. She had just perceived a woman who was writhing on the carpet, and suffering the most horrible convulsions.

"Oh ! the countess," said she in a whisper to Monsieur de Charny; "she has overheard our conversation ?"

"No, madame," answered he, "otherwise she would have warned your Majesty that we could be overheard."

And he sprang towards Andrée and raised her in his arms.

The queen remained standing at two steps from her, cold, pale, and trembling with anxiety.

CHAPTER XXIX.

A TRIO.

ANDRÉE was gradually recovering her senses, without knowing from whom assistance came, but she seemed instinctively to understand that some one had come to her assistance.

She raised her head, and her hands grasped the un hoped for succour that was offered her.

But her mind did not recover as soon as her body ; it still remained vacillating, stupefied, somnolent, during a few minutes.

After having succeeded in recalling her to physical life, M. de Charny attempted to restore her moral senses. But he was struggling against a terrible and concentrated unconsciousness.

Finally, she fastened her open but haggard eyes upon him, and with her still remaining delirium, without recognising the person who was supporting her, she gave a loud shriek, and abruptly pushed him from her.

During all this time, the queen turned her eyes in another direction ; she, a woman, she whose mission it was to console, to strengthen this afflicted friend, she abandoned her.

Charny raised Andrée in his powerful arms, notwithstanding the resistance she attempted to make, and, turning round to the queen, who was still standing, pale and motionless, —

“Pardon me, madame,” said he ; “something extraordinary must doubtless have happened. Madame de Charny is not

subject to fainting, and this is the first time I have ever seen her in this state."

"She must then be suffering greatly," said the queen, who still reverted to the idea that Andrée had overheard their conversation.

"Yes, without doubt she is suffering," answered the count, "and it is for that reason that I shall ask your Majesty the permission to have her carried to her own apartment. She needs the assistance of her attendants."

"Do so," said the queen, raising her hand to the bell.

But scarcely had Andrée heard the ringing of the bell, when she wrestled fearfully, and cried out in her delirium,—

"Oh Gilbert! that Gilbert!"

The queen trembled at the sound of this name, and the astonished count placed his wife upon a sofa.

At this moment a servant appeared to answer the bell.

"It is nothing," said the queen, making a sign to him with her hand to leave the room.

Then, being once more left to themselves, the count and the queen looked at each other. Andrée had again closed her eyes, and seemed to suffer from a second attack.

M. de Charny, who was kneeling near the sofa, prevented her from falling off it.

"Gilbert," repeated the queen, "what name is that?"

"We must inquire."

"I think I know it," said Marie Antoinette; "I think it is not the first time I have heard the countess pronounce that name."

But as if she had been threatened by this recollection of the queen, and that this threat had surprised her in the midst of her convulsions, Andrée opened her eyes, stretched out her arms to heaven, and, making a great effort, stood upright.

Her first look, an intelligent look, was this time directed at M. de Charny, whom she recognised, and greeted with caressing smiles.

Then, as if this involuntary manifestation of her thought

had been unworthy of her Spartan soul, Andrée turned her eyes in another direction, and perceived the queen. She immediately made a profound inclination.

"Ah! good Heaven, what then is the matter with you, madame?" said Monsieur de Charny; "you have alarmed me, — you, who are usually so strong and so courageous, to have suffered from a swoon?"

"Monsieur," said she, "such fearful events have taken place at Paris that, when men are trembling, it is by no means strange that women should faint. Have you then left Paris? Oh! you have done rightly."

"Good God! countess," said Charny, in a doubting tone, "was it then on my account that you underwent all this suffering?"

Andrée again looked at her husband and the queen, but did not answer.

"Why, certainly that is the reason, count. Why should you doubt it?" answered Marie Antoinette. "The Countess de Charny is not a queen; she has the right to be alarmed for her husband's safety."

Charny could detect jealousy in the queen's language.

"Oh! madame," said he, "I am quite certain that the countess fears still more for her sovereign's safety than for mine."

"But in fine," asked Marie Antoinette, "why and how is it that we found you in a swoon in this room, countess?"

"Oh! it would be impossible for me to tell you that, madame; I cannot myself account for it; but in this life of fatigue, of terror, and of painful emotions, which we have led for the last three days, nothing can be more natural, it seems to me, than the fainting of a woman."

"This is true," murmured the queen, who perceived that Andrée did not wish to be compelled to speak out.

"But," rejoined Andrée, in her turn, with that extraordinary degree of calmness which never abandoned her after she had once become the mistress of her will, and which was so much the more embarrassing in difficult

circumstances, that it could easily be discerned to be mere affectation, and concealed feelings altogether human; "but even your Majesty's eyes are at this moment humid."

And the count thought he could perceive in the words of his wife that ironical accent he had remarked but a few moments previously in the language of the queen.

"Madame," said he to Andrée, with a degree of severity to which his voice was evidently not accustomed, "it is not astonishing that the queen's eyes should be suffused with tears, for the queen loves her people, and the blood of the people has been shed."

"Fortunately, God has spared yours, monsieur," said Andrée, who was still no less cold and impenetrable.

"Yes; but it is not of her Majesty that we are speaking, madame, but of you; let us then return to our subject, the queen permits us to do so."

Marie Antoinette made an affirmative gesture with her head.

"You were alarmed, then, were you not?"

"Who, I?"

"You have been suffering; do not deny it; some accident has happened to you, — what was it? I know not what it can have been, but you will tell us."

"You are mistaken, monsieur."

"Have you had any reason to complain of any one, — of a man?"

Andrée turned pale.

"I have had no reason to complain of any one, monsieur; I have just come from the king's apartment."

"Did you come direct from there?"

"Yes, direct. Her Majesty can easily ascertain that fact."

"If such be the case," said Marie Antoinette, "the countess must be right. The king loves her too well, and knows that my own affection for her is too strong for him to disoblige her in any way whatever."

"But you mentioned a name," said Charny, still persisting.

"A name?"

"Yes; when you were recovering your senses."

Andrée looked at the queen as if to ask her for assistance; but, either because the queen did not understand her or did not wish to do so, —

"Yes," said she, "you pronounced the name of Gilbert."

"Gilbert! did I pronounce the name of Gilbert?" exclaimed Andrée, in a tone so full of terror that the count was more affected by this cry than he had been by her fainting.

"Yes!" exclaimed he, "you pronounced that name."

"Ah! indeed!" said Andrée, "that is singular."

And, by degrees, as the clouds close again, after having been rent asunder by the lightning, the countenance of the young woman, so violently agitated at the sound of that fatal name, recovered its serenity, and but a few muscles of her lovely face continued to tremble almost imperceptibly, like the last flashes of the tempest which vanish in the horizon.

"Gilbert," she repeated, "I do not know that name."

"Yes, Gilbert," repeated the queen; "come, try to recollect, my dear Andrée."

"But, madame," said the count to Marie Antoinette, "perhaps it is mere chance, and this name may be unknown to the countess."

"No," said Andrée, "no; it is not unknown to me. It is that of a learned man, of a skilful physician, who has just arrived from America, I believe, and who became intimate while there with Monsieur de Lafayette."

"Well, then?" asked the count.

"Well, then!" repeated Andrée, with the greatest presence of mind, "I do not know him personally, but he is said to be a very honourable man."

"Then why all this emotion, my dear countess?" observed the queen.

"This emotion! Have I, then, been excited?"

"Yes; one would have said that when you pronounced the name Gilbert, you felt as if undergoing torture."

"It is possible; I will tell you how it happened. I met a person in the king's cabinet, who was dressed in black, a man of austere countenance, who spoke of gloomy and horrible subjects; he related with the most frightful reality the assassination of Monsieur de Launay and Monsieur de Flesselles. I became terrified on hearing this intelligence, and I fell into the swoon in which you saw me. It may be that I spoke at that time; perhaps I then pronounced the name of Monsieur Gilbert."

"It is possible," repeated Monsieur de Charny, who was evidently not disposed to push the questioning any farther. "But now you feel more reassured, do you not, madame?"

"Completely."

"I will then beg of you to do one thing, Monsieur de Charny," said the queen.

"I am at the disposal of your Majesty."

"Go and find out Messieurs de Bezenval, De Broglie, and De Lambesq. Tell them to quarter their troops where they now are. The king will decide to-morrow in council what must then be done."

The count bowed; but before leaving the room he cast a last look at Andrée.

That look was full of affectionate anxiety.

It did not escape the queen.

"Countess," said she, "will you not return to the king's apartment with me?"

"No, madame, no," replied Andrée, quickly.

"And why not?"

"I ask your Majesty's permission to withdraw to my own apartment. The emotions I have undergone make me feel the want of rest."

"Come now, countess, speak frankly," said the queen.

"Have you had any disagreement with his Majesty?"

"Oh, by no means, madame! absolutely nothing."

"Oh, tell me if anything has happened! The king does not always spare my friends."

"The king is, as usual, full of kindness to me, but —"

"But you have no great wish to see him. Is it not so? There must positively be something at the bottom of all this, count," said the queen with affected gayety.

At this moment Andrée directed so expressive, so supplicating a look at the queen — a look so full of revelations — that the latter understood it was time to put an end to this minor war.

"In fact, countess," said she, "we will leave Monsieur de Charny to execute the commission I intrusted to him, and you can retire or remain here, according to your choice."

"Thank you, madame," said Andrée.

"Go, then, Monsieur de Charny," continued Marie Antoinette, while she noticed the expression of gratitude which was visible on the features of Andrée.

Either the count did not perceive, or did not wish to perceive it. He took the hand of his wife, and complimented her on the return of her strength and colour.

Then, making a most respectful bow to the queen, he left the room.

But while leaving the room he exchanged a last look with Marie Antoinette.

The queen's look meant to say, "Return quickly." That of the count replied, "As soon as possible."

As to Andrée, she followed with her eyes every one of her husband's movements, her bosom palpitating, and almost breathless.

She seemed to accelerate with her wishes the slow and noble step with which he approached the door. She, as it were, pushed him out of the room with the whole power of her will.

Therefore was it that, as soon as he had closed the door, as soon as he had disappeared, all the strength that Andrée had summoned to assist her in surmounting the difficulties of her position abandoned her; her face became pale, her limbs failed beneath her, and she fell into an arm-chair

which was within her reach, while she endeavoured to apologise to the queen for her involuntary breach of etiquette.

The queen ran to the chimney-piece, took a bottle of smelling-salts, and making Andrée inhale them she was soon restored to her senses, but more by the power of her own will than by the efficacy of the attentions she received at the royal hands.

In fact, there was something strange in the conduct of these two women. The queen seemed to love Andrée; Andrée respected the queen greatly; and nevertheless at certain moments they did not appear to be, the one an affectionate queen, the other a devoted subject, but two determined enemies.

As we have already said, the potent will of Andrée soon restored her strength. She rose up, gently removed the queen's hand, and, curtsying to her, —

"Your Majesty," said she, "has given me permission to retire to my own room."

"Yes, undoubtedly; and you are always free, dear countess, and this you know full well. Etiquette is not intended for you. But before you retire, have you nothing to tell me?"

"I, madame?" asked Andrée.

"Yes, you, without doubt."

"No; what should I have to tell you?"

"In regard to this Monsieur Gilbert, the sight of whom has made so strong an impression upon you."

Andrée trembled; but she merely made a sign of denial.

"In that case, I will not detain you any longer, dear Andrée; you may go."

And the queen took a step towards the door of the dressing-room, which communicated with her bedroom.

Andrée, on her side, having made her obeisance to the queen in the most irreproachable manner, was going towards the door.

But at the very moment she was about to open it, steps

were heard in the corridor, and a hand was placed on the external handle of the door.

At the same time the voice of Louis XVI. was heard, giving orders for the night to his valet.

"The king, madame!" said Andrée, retreating several steps; "the king!"

"And what of that? Yes, it is the king," said Marie Antoinette. "Does he terrify you to such a degree as this?"

"Madame, in the name of Heaven," cried Andrée, "let me not see the king! Let me not meet the king face to face, at all events this evening. I should die of shame."

"But finally you will tell me —"

"Everything—yes, everything—if your Majesty requires it. But hide me!"

"Go into my boudoir," said Marie Antoinette; "you can leave it as soon as the king himself retires. Rest assured your captivity will not be of long duration. The king never remains here long."

"Oh, thanks! thanks!" exclaimed the countess.

And, rushing into the boudoir, she disappeared at the very moment that the king, having opened the door, appeared upon the threshold of the chamber.

The king entered.

CHAPTER XXX.

A KING AND A QUEEN.

THE queen, after looking around, greeted the king, who gave her his hand.

"To what good chance am I indebted for this call?" asked Marie Antoinette.

"Really, to chance; I happened to meet Monsieur de Charny just outside, and, on his telling me that you had commissioned him to tell our soldiers to remain inactive, I was so pleased that I hastened to thank you for your wise resolution."

"Yes," said the queen, "I have reconsidered the matter; and it seems best for the troops to be kept quiet, and thus afford no pretext for intestine war."

"I am very glad that you have reached that decision. I thought I might convince you eventually."

"Your Majesty has gained your object without much trouble; for I formed this decision quite uninfluenced by you."

"Well, that proves that you are almost reasonable, and that, when I have communicated to you some of my reflections, you will be altogether so."

"But, if our opinions coincide, sire, you will not be obliged to impart your reflections to me."

"Oh! be calm, madame. I am no fonder of arguing than you. Why should we not talk about the affairs of the nation, as a good wife talks with her husband about the affairs of the household?"

These last words were uttered by Louis XVI. with the perfect good nature which he so often evinced towards his friends.

"Oh, sire!" said the queen, "I am always ready for conversations of that nature; but is this a fitting time?"

"I think so. Did you not just say that you desire no hostile demonstration?"

"Yes."

"But you did not give me your reason."

"You did not ask me for it."

"Well, I ask you now."

"Impotence."

"Ah! that is your reason? Then were we stronger, you would advise war?"

"I would burn Paris."

"Oh! I was certain your motives for not wishing war were not the same as mine."

"Well, what are yours?"

"Mine?" asked the king.

"Yes," answered Marie Antoinette, "yours."

"I have only one."

"Name it."

"Oh, I can do that in a few words. I do not wish to engage in war with the people, because I find that the people are in the right."

Marie Antoinette made a gesture of surprise.

"Right!" she said; "the people right in revolting?"

"Certainly."

"Right in storming the Bastille, in killing the governor, in murdering the provost of the merchants, in exterminating your soldiers?"

"Yes, by Heaven! they were."

"And these are the reflections you wished me to hear!" exclaimed the queen.

"I have told them to you as they occurred to me."

"At dinner?"

"Good!" said the king; "let us discuss the subject of

nourishment. You cannot pardon me for my appetite. You would have me poetical and ethereal; but I come of a race of eaters. Not only did Henri IV. eat, he drank immoderately; the great and poetic Louis XIV. ate enough to make one blush; King Louis XV., that he might have his food to his taste, baked his biscuits with his own royal hands, and had Madame Dubarry make his coffee. As for me, when I am hungry, I cannot resist my appetite; I am compelled to follow the example of my illustrious ancestors, Henri IV., Louis XIV., and Louis XV. If this is a constitutional necessity, pray be lenient with me; if it is a fault, forgive me."

"But, sire, you must confess —"

"That it is wrong to eat when I am hungry," said the king, calmly shaking his head.

"Oh, no! I am not speaking about that. I refer to the people."

"Ah!"

"You must confess that the people have been in the wrong."

"In rebelling? By no means. Come, let us review all our ministers. How many, since our accession to the throne, have felt any interest in the welfare of the people? Two, — Turgot and Monsieur de Necker. You and your followers have banished these men. For one of them the people have raised a tumult; for the other they may cause a revolution. Let us consider the others. They were, indeed, charming fellows; were they not? Monsieur de Maurepas, that creature of my aunts, a song writer. It is not the ministers' part to sing; let them leave that to the people. Monsieur de Calonne, whose epigrammatical answer to some question of yours will be handed down to posterity: 'If it is possible, it is done; if it is impossible, it shall be done.' That epigram cost the people to the tune of a hundred millions. Do you wonder that they find it a little less witty than it appears to you? In fact, pray understand me, madame, by retaining all the ministers

who fleece the people, and dismissing all who love them, I fear I shall not succeed in quieting them, and making them more devoted to our government."

"Good! Then insurrection is right. Shout this doctrine from the house-tops. But, truly, I am glad that you have confided these sentiments to me alone. If others heard you!"

"Oh, yes, yes!" replied the king; "it is no news to me. I know very well that should Polignac, Dreux-Brézé, Clermont-Tonnerre, and Coigny hear me, they would shrug their shoulders behind my back; that Polignac, to whom, one fine morning, you made over the county of Fénestrange, which cost you twelve hundred thousand francs; Sartine, to whom I have already given a pension of eighty-nine thousand francs, and who has just received from you two hundred thousand francs, ostensibly as a stipendiary fund; the Prince of Deux-Ponts, to whom you compelled me to give nine hundred and forty-five thousand francs to clear off his debts; Marie de Laval and Madame de Magnenville, who each finger a pension of eighty thousand francs; Coigny, who is loaded with all kind of pensions, and who on one occasion, when I was contemplating making a reduction in his appointments, hemmed me in between two doors, and would have fallen upon me, I believe, had I not yielded and given him all he wishes;—all these people are your friends, are they not? Well, speak about them. This much I will say, although, since it is only too true, I know you will deny it, —if all these people had been in the Bastille, instead of at court, the people would have fortified it rather than have demolished it."

"Oh!" exclaimed the queen, unable to suppress her anger.

"Say what you may," Louis replied calmly, "I have spoken the truth."

"Oh, your dear people! Ah, well! they will not have occasion much longer to hate my friends, for they are going into exile."

"They are going away!" exclaimed the king.

"Yes, they are going away."

"Polignac? the women?"

"Yes."

"Heaven be praised!" exclaimed the king. "So much the better! so much the better!"

"Why such exclamations? Are you not sorry?"

"No indeed; quite the reverse. If they need money to take them away, I will furnish it gladly. It will be expended to good effect. I wish you a pleasant journey, ladies and gentlemen," said the king, radiant.

"Yes," said the queen, "it is very evident that you like cowardice."

"Well, let us come to an understanding; you are doing them justice at last."

"They are not dismissed; they are running away."

"No matter, so that they leave."

"And your own family have suggested this despicable conduct."

"My family have advised your favourites to go away! I did not credit them with so much good sense. Tell me who they are, that I may thank them."

"Your Aunt Adelaide; your brother D'Artois."

"My brother D'Artois? Do you think he will follow his own advice and go with the rest?"

"Why not?" replied Marie Antoinette, hoping to vex the king.

"Heaven grant it!" exclaimed Louis. "Let Monsieur D'Artois depart; I would wish him a pleasant journey."

"Your own brother!" exclaimed Marie Antoinette.

"True; but what quality has he to make me desire his presence here? He has wit and courage, I admit, but no depth; he acts the part of a prince of France like one of the fops of the time of Louis XIII., — a blundering fellow, who has compromised even you, the wife of Cæsar."

"Cæsar!" muttered the queen, with bitter irony.

"Well, Claudius then, if you like it better," answered

the king; "for you know, madame, that Claudius as well as Nero was a Cæsar."

The queen looked down. This historical coolness confused her somewhat.

"Claudius, since you prefer the name of Claudius to that of Cæsar, — Claudius, you know, was obliged to shut the gate of Versailles one night to give you a lesson that you were staying out too late. It was Monsieur d'Artois who got you that lesson. I shall not, therefore, miss him. As to my aunt, she deserves to be enrolled in the families of the Cæsars; but we all know her. Let her go in peace; I can live without her. Then there is Monsieur de Provence; do you think his departure will grieve me? A good journey to him!"

"Oh! he has said nothing about leaving."

"So much the worse. You see, my dear Monsieur de Provence knows Latin too well for me. I have to speak English to be even with him. Monsieur de Provence put Beaumarchais on our shoulders, thrusting him in at Bicêtre, For-Lévêque, and I know not where, on his own private authority; and a fine return this same Beaumarchais has made us for all this. So Monsieur de Provence will remain; so much the worse! I know of but one honourable man in your whole household, Madame, and he is Monsieur de Charny."

The queen blushed and turned away.

"We were speaking about the Bastile," resumed the king, after a short pause, "and you were lamenting its having been taken."

"Be seated, sire, I entreat," replied the queen; "it seems that you have many things to discuss."

"No, I thank you; I prefer to walk about as I talk. It helps my digestion, which is bad, although my appetite is good. No one seems to care for my health. Very likely they are saying at this moment, 'The king has supped and is sleeping.' Well, this is the way I am sleeping, bolt upright; trying to aid my digestion, and at the same time,

talking politics with my wife. Ah, madame, I am expiating! I am expiating!"

"Expiating what, please?"

"The sins of a century, whose scapegoat I am. I am expiating the sins of Madame de Pompadour, Madame Dubarry, the Parc-aux-Cerfs; the sins of poor Latude, who for thirty years rotted in dungeons, and was immortalised by suffering,—one more victim who caused the Bastille to be hated. Poor fellow! Ah, madame, how many mistakes have I made in executing the stupid measures of others! I have helped persecute philosophers, political economists, scientists, men of letters,—all these men who asked for nothing better than to love me. If I had won their affection, they would at once have constituted the glory and the happiness of my reign. Monsieur Rousseau, for instance, that bugbear of Sartines and others,—ah well! I saw him one day myself, at Trianon,—you recall the occasion. His clothes indeed were ill brushed, and his beard was long; but for all that he was a good man. Had I donned my rough gray coat and stockings, and said to Monsieur Rousseau, 'Let us go and gather mosses in the woods of Ville d'Avray —'"

"Well, what then?" interrupted the queen contemptuously.

"Then he would not have written the 'Vicar of Savoy' nor the 'Social Contract.'"

"Yes, yes, that is the way you reason," replied Marie Antoinette. "You are prudent, and fear your people as a dog fears his master."

"Not so, as the master fears his dog; it is something to be assured that his dog will not bite him. Madame, when I walk with Médor, that Pyrenean hound presented to me by the king of Spain, I feel quite proud of his amity. Were he not my friend, he would chew me up with his great white teeth. You may laugh if you will; I say to him, 'Pretty Médor, good Médor,' and he fawns upon me. I prefer his tongue to his fangs."

"Well, so be it. Flatter the Revolutionists, pet them, throw titbits to them."

"That is precisely the course I intend to pursue. I will save up my money, and will treat them like so many Cerberi. Wait! There is Monsieur Mirabeau."

"Oh yes! tell me about that ravenous beast."

"With fifty thousand francs a month, he will be a Médor; but perhaps, if we delay, he will not be satisfied with less than half a million."

The queen laughed scornfully.

"The idea of flattering people like him!"

"Monsieur Bailly," continued the king, "having been appointed minister of arts, — an office which I shall create for my own amusement, — will be another Médor. Pardon me, madame, if my views differ from yours. I often recall the saying of my ancestor Henri IV., who was a profound politician."

"What was it?"

"Flies are not caught with vinegar."

"Sancho said that, too, or something like it."

"Well, Sancho would have made the people of Barataria, provided there had been such a place in existence, very happy."

"Sire, your ancestor Henri IV. caught wolves as well as flies. Witness Marshal de Biron, whose throat he cut, and then allowed him to say what he pleased. By reasoning like Henri and acting as you do, you take all prestige from royalty, which can exist only by prestige. You degrade the principle of majesty in which all the royal virtues are centred. He who respects, loves; he who loves, obeys."

"Ah! let us discuss majesty a little," interrupted the king, with a smile. "You are the exemplification of majesty. Not even your mother, Maria Theresa, has promulgated the science of majesty as you have."

"I understand you. You mean that my majesty does not prevent the French people from abhorring me."

"Not abhorring, I didn't say that, my dear Antoi-

A KING AND A QUEEN.

nette," said the king gently, "perhaps you are not as well loved as you deserve to be."

"Sire," said the queen, deeply hurt, "you only echo the words of others. Yet I have injured no one; on the contrary, I have often benefited my subjects. Why should they hate me as you say? Would they not love me were it not for the few people who make a point of saying daily, 'The queen is not loved'? Do you know, sire, if one voice only said it, one hundred people would echo it; a hundred voices evoke ten thousand, the whole nation repeats, 'The queen is not loved!' simply because one person made that assertion."

"Good Heavens!" muttered the king.

"Thank goodness!" interrupted the queen, "I have but little faith in popularity; but at the same time I think my unpopularity has been exaggerated. Praises are not showered upon me, I admit, yet I was once the idol of the people; they loved me too much, now they have gone to the opposite extreme and they hate me."

"Stay, madame," said the king, "you do not know the whole truth, you are labouring under a delusion; were we not talking about the Bastile?"

"Yes."

"Well, there was a whole room in the Bastile filled with books written against you. They will surely have burned them."

"With what do those books accuse me?"

"Ah! you know very well, madame, that I have no desire either to accuse or to judge you. When the pamphlets appeared, I had the whole edition seized and hidden in the Bastile. Sometimes these papers fall into my hands. Indeed, I have one in my pocket, this very moment," said the king, "and it is an abominable one."

"Show it to me," cried the queen.

"I cannot," said the king, "it is illustrated."

"And have matters reached this point? Have you attained such a condition of blindness and imbecility that

you do not even attempt to discover the sources of all these base calumnies ? ”

“That is the very thing I have been busied about for a long time. I have traced them to their source ; there is not one of my lieutenants of police who has not grown gray in that service.”

“Then you have discovered the author of these slanders ? ”

“I know one of them at least, Monsieur Furth, the author of that one ; there is his receipt for 22,500 francs. You see I do not mind the cost, when the enterprise is worth the trouble.”

“But the others ? the others ? ”

“Ah ! they are often hungry wretches who are vegetating in England or Holland. We are bitten, stung, irritated ; we ferret them out expecting to find a serpent, a crocodile, to crush or to kill ; and we find, instead, an insect so mean, so base, so despicable, that we dare not soil our hands by touching it, even to punish it.”

“That is all very fine ! But if you do not wish to touch the insects, why do you not boldly accuse the sun, which calls them into existence ? In truth, we may safely affirm that Philip of Orleans is that sun ! ”

“Ha ! ” exclaimed the king, clapping his hands, “are you there ? Seek not to embroil me with Philip of Orleans.”

“Embroider you with your enemy ! Sire, your idea is original, to say the least.”

The king shrugged his shoulders.

“So that is the way you interpret matters. Monsieur d’Orleans, whom you attack, has just placed himself under my orders to fight the rebels, and leaves Paris on his way to Versailles. Monsieur d’Orleans my enemy ! Truly madame, your hatred for the house of Orleans is beyond belief.”

“Oh ! he has come, has he ? and do you know the reason ? He fears that his absence might be remarked in the

general demonstration of loyalty. He has come because he is a coward."

"Indeed! Let us begin again. Whoever was the first to impute such motives to Orleans must be a coward himself. You had it reported in your gazette that he showed the white feather at Ushant, because you wished to dishonour him. But it was a base calumny, madame. Philip was not afraid nor did he flee. Had he fled, he would have been no Orleans, for they are noted for their bravery. The chief of the family, who seemed to have descended from Henri III. rather than Henri IV., was brave, despite D'Effiat and Chevalier de Lorraine. He braved death at the battle of Cassel. The regent had some trifling complaints to make against his manners, I believe; but he exposed his life at Steinkirk, at Nerwinde, and at Almanza, like the meanest soldier in his army. Suppress part of the truth, madame, if it pleases you to do so; but tell not of evil that does not exist."

"Your Majesty seems to be in the humour to whitewash all the revolutionists. You will see what that fellow is worth. If I regret the destruction of the Bastile, it is because he was at large while other criminals were confined in it."

"Ah, well!" said the king. "Had Monsieur d'Orleans been in the Bastile, we should have been in a fine predicament to-day."

"What would have happened, in that case?"

"You know they carried his bust in the procession crowned with flowers, as they also did that of Necker."

"Yes, I am aware of that fact."

"Ah, well! once out of the Bastile, they would have made Orleans the king of France."

"And perhaps you would have thought that just," replied Marie Antoinette, bitterly ironical.

"Yes, I should. You may shrug your shoulders as much as you please. In judging others, I seek to put myself in their place. From the height of the throne, we cannot well

see the people; I put myself on the level of a burgess or clodhopper, and ask myself how I should endure having a noble count me among his cows and poultry, as a chattel; how I should bear having my lord's ten thousand pigeons eat daily ten grains each of wheat, oats, or buckwheat, — that is to say, about two bushels, — whilst his wild boars rooted up my potatoes, whilst his hares and rabbits browsed on my clover, whilst his tax-gatherers tithed my produce, whilst my lord himself kissed my wife and daughters, whilst the king pressed my sons into his army, and whilst the priest, in his moments of passion, condemned my soul to endless misery."

"Why, sire," interrupted the queen, her eyes flashing, "you should take a pickaxe and go to help the others in destroying the Bastile."

"You laugh," said the king; "but by my troth I should go, were it not absurd for a king to handle a pickaxe when he could have the same thing done by a stroke of his pen. Yes, I should take a pickaxe, and they would applaud me, as I applauded those who accomplished the business. Nay, madame, they did me a great service when they demolished the Bastile, and to you they did a still greater; yes, to you, who can no longer humour the caprices of your friends by throwing honest people into dungeons."

"Honest people in the Bastile! I, — I sent honest people there! Well, perhaps Monsieur de Rohan is an honest man!"

"Oh, do not mention his name; I do not refer to him. We were not particularly successful in his case, since the Parliament set him at liberty. Besides, a prince of the church should not have been sent there in company with forgers and robbers; and indeed I do not understand why forgers and robbers should be consigned to the Bastile. Are there not prisons in Paris which have cost me a great deal, and which have been erected for entertaining gentry of this sort? But let the forgers and the robbers pass; the evil is that honest men have been sent there."

"Honest men?"

"Certainly; I have seen this very day an honest man who has been incarcerated there, and who has been released only a very short time since."

"When was that?"

"This morning."

"And you have seen, this evening, a man who was released from the Bastile this morning?"

"I have just parted from him."

"Who is he?"

"One of your acquaintances."

"My acquaintances?"

"Yes."

"Might I ask his name?"

"Doctor Gilbert."

"Gilbert! Gilbert!" exclaimed the queen. "What the one whom Andrée named on recovering from her fainting fit?"

"Precisely so; it must have been the same; I could swear to it."

"Was that man in the Bastile?"

"Faith, madame, one would think you were ignorant of that fact."

"I am entirely ignorant of it."

Then, perceiving the king's astonishment, she added, —

"Unless, perchance, I have forgotten it."

"Ah!" exclaimed the king, "there is always a reason for these acts of injustice which one forgets. But although you, madame, may have forgotten both the reason and the doctor, Madame de Charny has forgotten neither, I will answer for it."

"Sire! sire!" exclaimed Marie Antoinette.

"There must have been something between them," continued the king.

"Sire, I beg you to refrain," said the queen, looking anxiously toward the boudoir in which Andrée was concealed, and could hear all that was said.

"Oh, yes," said the king, laughing; "you are afraid that De Charny may chance to learn. Poor De Charny!"

"Sire, I entreat you. Madame de Charny is a chaste woman, and I would sooner believe that this Doctor Gilbert —"

"Pshaw!" interrupted the king; "do you accuse that honest fellow? I know what I know; and the worst of it is, that knowing what I do, I still do not know all."

"Really, I am shocked at your persisting in harbouring such suspicions," replied the queen, her eyes fixed on the cabinet.

"Oh!" said Louis, "I am in no hurry; I shall lose nothing by waiting a little. The beginning promises so interesting a conclusion, that I shall seek to learn it from Gilbert himself, since he is now my physician."

"That fellow your physician? You can trust the life of the king to a stranger?"

"Oh!" said the king, coolly, "I can trust my impressions. I read the man's inmost soul at a glance."

The queen groaned in anger mingled with disdain.

"You may sneer if you wish," said the king, "but you can never shake my faith in Doctor Gilbert's learning and science."

"You are infatuated."

"I should like to see you in my place. I should like to know if Monsieur Mesmer was not able to make some impression on you and on Madame de Lamballe."

"Monsieur Mesmer?" said the queen, blushing.

"Yes; four years ago you went, disguised, to one of his meetings. Oh! my police are well trained; you see I know all," said the king, smiling kindly at Marie Antoinette.

"You know all, sire," answered the queen; "and you are a good dissembler, for you have never mentioned the matter to me."

"Why should I have done so? The novelists and writers for the newspapers have abused you sufficiently on that score. But to return to Gilbert and to Mesmer. Monsieur

A KING AND A QUEEN.

Mesmer placed you beside a vat, touched you with a steel rod, surrounded himself with a thousand phantasmagoria, like the quack he was. Gilbert uses no illusions; he extends his hand over a woman; she goes to sleep, and talks in her sleep."

"Talks!" muttered the queen, alarmed.

"Yes," replied the king, rejoicing in her discomfiture. "Put to sleep by Gilbert, she talks, and says very strange things."

The queen grew pale.

"Madame de Charny may have said strange things," she said.

"Most strange," said the king. "It was very fortunate for her —"

"Hush! hush!" interrupted Marie Antoinette.

"Why should I refrain? I repeat, it was very fortunate for her that I alone overheard her."

"Oh! I beg you, sire, say no more about it."

"Well, I am willing to stop talking. I am so weary that I feel as if I should drop; and, as I eat when I am hungry, so do I go to bed when I am sleepy. I bid you good night, madame, and may you profit from our conversation."

"What do you mean, sire?"

"The people were in the right when they undid what we and our friends had done: witness my poor Doctor Gilbert. Adieu, madame; trust me, that after signalling the danger, I shall have the courage to prevent it. Pleasant dreams, Antoinette."

And the king moved towards the door.

Suddenly he turned around. "Apropos," said he, "warn Madame de Charny that she had better make her peace with the doctor, if it is not already too late. Adieu."

He slowly retired, shutting the doors himself with all the satisfaction of the mechanic when his locks work well under the pressure of his fingers.

The king had not taken a dozen steps before the countess

rushed out from the boudoir, ran to the doors, and bolted them, and drew the curtains. She seemed beside herself with rage and madness. Then, when fully assured that she could be neither seen nor heard, she returned to the queen with a heart-rending cry, fell on her knees, and exclaimed, —

“Save me, madame! In the name of Heaven, save me!”

Then, after a pause followed by a long-drawn sigh, she added, “And I will tell you all.”

END OF VOL. I

